## A Response to Luther Book 1

Page and line numbers correspond to *The Complete Works of St. Thomas More* (Yale University Press, 1969), volume 5. Side-glosses are given as footnotes.

A complete concordance to this work can be found at www.thomasmorestudies.org/publications.html#Concordance.

N.B. This English translation of the Latin is reproduced, with permission, from volume 5 of *The Complete Works of St. Thomas More: Responsio ad Lutherum* (Yale University Press, 1969), edited by John M. Headley, translated by Sister Scholastica Mandeville. Copyright © 1969 by Yale University. All rights reserved.

The choice, learned, witty, pious work of the most learned William Ross in which he very admirably exposes and refutes the frantic calumnies with which that most foul buffoon, Luther, attacks the invincible king of England and France, Henry the eighth of that name, the defender of the faith, renowned no less for his learning than for his royal power. Printed again with the utmost care and divided into chapters, with indices added through the work of the very learned John Carcellius.

> London, a.d., 1523

#### JOHN CARCELLIUS: TO THE HONORABLE READER, GREETINGS.

The other day I went to a printer's shop to visit and converse with the man. After we had chatted together for some time on a variety of topics and especially on books and writing, I finally asked him whether he was engaged in any new work. He showed me one little book brought to him from Spain, written by Ferdinand Baravellus, a man very outstanding in theology. In this book he answers the insane ravings with which Martin Luther had so violently and shamelessly, indeed, so scurrilously raged against a king most distinguished by all the noble qualities of a most exalted prince. The writer was led to do this partly from motives of religion, since he perceived that the Church and religion of Christ were everywhere being weakened by the factions and dissensions of wicked heretics; partly from vexation that a most vile man was falsely using the pretext of holiness and the name of Christian religion, while in fact being led on by foolish conceit and a greedy desire for renown to slander whomever he pleased, with no regard for the rank of anyone.

The printer said that he was planning to reprint this work for the 20 handsome profit which he hoped to gain from it since that copy was the only one in the country, and it was the kind of work he was sure everyone would be eager to buy. I promised my help also in the project, in case there were any service I could render. I asked to borrow the book for a few days; he willingly granted me this, asking moreover 25 that if I could add to the value of the work in any way, I should render him that service so that the book might be more favorably received when it was published from his shop. Therefore, after I had read through a good part of the work very carefully and found it to my liking, I thought it would not be useless, since the author had writ-30 ten the whole work straight through without interruption, to divide the work into chapters with a title added to each chapter, and to add an index so that single items might be found more readily by the reader. This would likewise be useful in case further copies were imported later, which was likely to happen, seeing that printers do not 35 3

5

10

publish books for just one region. Moreover, the contents of the book were such that it seemed to be just what all the people were looking for, both because of the significance of the controversy and because of the reputation of the men who engage in it. What more serious cause can be handled than that in which the religion of God all good and great is concerned? Or what cause can be defended under more honorable patronage than that which the greatest princes, laying aside their proper pursuits, take up before the eyes of all the world? Not to mention all the other men of every rank, Henry VIII, king of England, justly called the Defender of the Faith, did not at all shrink from joining battle in the cause of Christ with a mean and base little friar. When the latter had repaid the king's wholesome admonitions and sound counsel with nothing but scurrilous jeers and violent abuse, and the high-minded king did not honor the vile charlatan with a second response, this man of whom I speak, Baravellus, a Spaniard remarkably learned in every branch of learning, considering it shameful that a despised wretch should with impunity insult not only men but even the saints themselves, represented and exposed the wretch before all the world in such a way that no mirror can give a clearer image of the body than this work enables one to perceive the execrable soul of Luther. As I said, if further copies of the work should be imported, still the copies which would be enhanced by my plan would assure a better sale to the printer whom I most favored. Since I was not able to do this without making some changes and without occasionally adding some comments of my own, I must beg of you, honorable reader, if I have given you any satisfaction by the one part of my labor, as I have

neither the effort nor the time so spent, provided you are inspired by a love of religion or by desire for learning, or delight in a charming dis-

position or a witty style.

certainly sought to do, to forgive me for the other part in that I have boldly laid hands on the writing of another person. Moreover, as for the book itself, you need not look to me to praise it highly, for it will immediately provide evidence concerning its own worth. This I certainly do promise, that if you read it through, you will regret

35

5

5

10

15

20

25

#### FERDINAND BARAVELLUS OF THE ANCIENT NOBILITY SENDS GREETINGS TO THE MOST ILLUSTRIOUS FRANCIS LUCELLUS

Have you ever heard, distinguished Sir, with what artifice I was tricked into writing this work by that most honorable man and the glory of his country, your uncle? <sup>1</sup> Indeed, though by nature I always shrink from every kind of contention, I particularly	5
shrink from that kind where I have to contend with a person who, sensing that he has been overcome by reason, turns wholly to wrangling. <sup>2</sup> Well, as I was returning home from the university, I stopped off from my journey at the castle of	10
your uncle so that, before any of my own family, I might visit the man to whom I owed almost more than to my whole family. As various topics came up in the conversation, then, he deliberately, but as it were incidentally, threw in a mention of Luther, inquiring what our university thought about the books of this man. I told him the	15
facts: that in the beginning there were various reactions, some men captivated by novelty, others unaware of the new ideas; many thought that some things were not badly written and were handled with some skill, but that time alone, with the growing output of his books, would show what spirit inspired the man. Nor was that	20
surmise wrong. For when one book after another appeared un- interruptedly, each one worse than the last, <sup>3</sup> there finally appeared the <i>Babylon</i> , truly that tower of Babel which was built up against heaven, <sup>4</sup> from which the impious fellow undertook to destroy the	25
heavenly sacraments of Christ. As soon as that work was read through and circulated among the people, no one was found so senseless as not to realize what spirit inspired the madman. As a result, many men were already intending to write against his blasphemies, when behold there shortly appeared that most	30
learned book of the most noble king of England, such a work indeed that, so far as that problem was concerned, it deprived	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> In these footnotes are given translations of the side-glosses that appeared in More's Latin text. The first is: How the author was prevailed on to write this work.
<sup>2</sup> He says he shrinks from contending with wranglers. Such is Luther
<sup>3</sup> Luther always appeared to surpass himself in malice
<sup>4</sup> The spirit that governs Luther is evident from his *Babylon*

everyone else of a reason for writing. For he attacked, stormed, over- threw that Babylon, the stronghold of impious heresies, so thoroughly that it did not seem worth while for anyone to take up arms again against a fortress that was overthrown and destroyed from its very foundation. At this point your uncle lit on what he had been looking for, that is,	5
a place for catching me. "They say," he remarked, "that Luther has	
answered the king."	
"Answered?" I replied. "Shameless as he is, surely he will not, by trying that, act in such a way as to make more clear what a godless	10
and stupid cause he is supporting, one which has no means of	10
defense."	
"But what if it should perchance happen," he said, "that instead of	
a defense he employs insolence, and though saying nothing is still not	
quiet; will I then be able to persuade you to expose and restrain with	15
your pen the madness of the shameless fellow?"	10
I, not at all suspecting that this would ever happen, said: "I prom-	
ise, and very willingly. For a crane suffices against a dwarf. <sup>5</sup> If	
Luther were stronger than Hercules, his	
cause certainly renders him more feeble	20
than a dead man."	
Then, turning around for a few moments into the window-recess,	
he brought out a book. "Here is the book, Ferdinand," he said. And,	
smiling pleasantly, he added, "Now see to it that you carry out dili-	
gently what you have pledged easily."	25
Then I said, "What sort of pledge are you talking about? As	
if the law held valid a pledge drawn out of me by an evil decep-	
tion."	
He answered, "Let it be deception, if you will; but how can it be	• •
evil when it proposes nothing else but that you benefit and profit all	30
good men?"	
Why say more? I again promised, this time seriously, that I would	
do it. So I was escorted to my chamber, for he would not hear of my	
departing that night. As soon as possible I began to read Luther's	25
book, so eager was I to see whether he had found any means of	35
rendering probable any of those arguments which I felt that the king had already refuted quite clearly, quite forcefully both from scripture	
and from reason. When I began to read—good God, what an ocean of	
nonsense, what a bottomless pit of madness presented itself! But on	
nonoense, what a bottonness pri of machess presented itself. Dut on	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup> Luther a pygmy

the actual subject I seldom read any argument which I did not remember the king to have neatly solved; except that in a few passages Luther seemed not altogether to miss the mark with his taunts. I was wondering to myself why I had not earlier carefully pondered the possibility of such an interpretation and why so important a passage had been left unnoticed by the king, who is as shrewd as he is learned. So I sent a servant to your uncle to ask that if he had the book of the king in his possession he would please let me have it. The servant immediately brought the book and I examined the passages. But then, strange to say, the joke immediately began to fall completely flat, seeing that it sprang not from the words of the prince but from the fact that Luther had twisted them in the telling,: so that through fraud he could appear to the reader as witty. On the following day, therefore, as I was on the point of departing, I again excused myself, saying that nothing of significance had been omitted by the king and nothing new added by Luther; that if the matter were otherwise, I was not so cowardly as to refuse to engage in such an easy struggle, either at his urging or for the sake of the common good;: but that now my sense of honor could hardly bear that I should respond to the sheer brawling, the sheer wrangling, the sheer raving of this man who presents no argument, no reasoning at all. It would be as though, to quote Horace, Messius were to join battle with Sarmentus. "Away with those excuses," he said. "I want you not only to

answer him, but even to answer at length, presenting from both sides the words of each one and subjoining your own comments in which this observation of yours will become obvious to everyone. Indeed, I want you for a short time to do violence to your excessively modest nature until you also throw back at him and return in kind that abuse itself, not so much that the scoundrel may hear what he has deserved as that what many find their sole pleasure in him may come to delight them on the other hand when it is read about him.6 Should you perhaps be: afraid that the encounter will cast the stain: of wantonness on you if you should contend a little less restrainedly with this scoundrel, I indeed think far otherwise, my dear Ferdinand. Since this frenzied friarlet could not at all restrain himself from vomiting out such continuous, such senseless abuse against the bishops, the princes, against the vicar of Christ, against the whole company of holy fathers, against the entire church, what reader will

11

5

10

15

20

25

30

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>6</sup> Why the author at times jokes rather freely in this work

be so unjust as to consider that man wanton, indeed as not to approve and extol that man who attacks such a wretch with words he deserves, <sup>7</sup> especially when the man answers: that book which contains nothing else but:		13
the most foolish wranglings with which the completely mad buffoon raves wildly against the most illustrious king who is fully adorned with all noble qualities of body and mind."	5	
What would you have me say more? Since there was no refusing, I promised, as I was bidding him farewell and departing, that I would write the book. And so I wrote it as you see it. But because God took your uncle away from us and while removing his body worn out with the feebleness of age rewarded with immortality the virtues of his soul, I felt that I could do nothing more fitting than to pay to the nephew what I had promised to the uncle, especially to such a	10	
nephew what I had promised to the uncle, especially to such a nephew who, while he succeeds to the material possessions of his uncle on the latter's dying childless, can likewise be thought to have acquired as though by hereditary right his uncle's remarkable learn- ing and outstanding virtues. May you then, most noble Sir, accept this work, and accept it with all its leaves, lest you be unaware that,	15	
as whatever I have written ought to be credited to your uncle, so any profit that comes from it ought to be credited to you alone. Farewell, most honored Sir, and embrace with your usual favor Baravellus who is more than wholly yours. From our university. February 11.	20	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>7</sup> Luther's petulance

#### WILLIAM ROSS TO HIS FRIEND JOHN CARCELLIUS, GREETINGS

My dear John, I hope that you are well, as I am. But I am afraid that: I would not have been feeling quite so well had I not hurriedly rushed out of the city to the country. For the plague had not only begun to break out at Rome, but also to grow in virulence, when I, who had as: yet hardly settled down there, was forced to withdraw in fresh alarm and anxiety to this place about twenty miles distant. I was welcomed and entertained here by a most gracious host. Toward the whole English race in particular, to which he traces his paternal ancestry,: he shows a friendliness that is almost beyond belief. While I was staying here, my host one day said, "Here, my dear Ross, is a book recently sent to me from the city, which I think you will very much wish to see, since it is that in which Luther answers your king."

"Really?" I said. "Indeed, there is nothing I would rather read. The prince's book I read and reread already a year ago at Venice. Several of us thought it so thorough that I concluded Luther would never be so stupid as to render evident by answering it how wicked and ridiculous a cause he was defending, one that could not at all admit of any sort of defense which would be thought creditable." With this remark I eagerly seized and opened the book. When I began to read—good God, what a pit of raving madness, what an abyss of violent passion I discovered! I'll be hanged if among the dense and uninterrupted darkness of Lutheran madness I could discover any interval of lucidity. He talks nonsense, he wrangles, he plays the buffoon, he laughs; but laughs like a Sardonian, aware of course that not in the book of the king but in his own pin-head does: he find anything to laugh at. For at times I caught him falsely adding certain points so that in attacking them he could appear witty.

My host listened to me reading for a long time, meanwhile frequently and openly displaying his disgust, for he was no stranger to learning and had a fine sense of propriety and above all of reverence: for religion. Then he said: "My dear Ross, why do you allow that worthless fellow to express those blasphemies with impunity? He not only assails your king with his foolish abuse. Against the emperor also and the pope, against all the princes of Germany, against all good and

5

10

15

20

25

30

learned men, and finally against all the saints this impious hangdog inveighs with his disgusting taunts. Will you allow this buffoon to say such things with impunity?":

"How with impunity," I answered, "since he takes everyone else's place in avenging himself? What harsher vengeance can be desired than that he has been driven so mad that, impiously aroused by his raging sense of guilt, out of his mind, and powerless to conceal his: madness, he is so violently carried away that with his own hand he: writes on every page and almost every wall that the most insane scoundrel and the most shameless buffoon is Luther. My prince, against whom especially this mad scoundrel plays the buffoon, is of too majestic a spirit and too considered a judgment to be at all disturbed by the nonsense of a raving buffoon. If the book of Luther would have in it anything worthy of an answer, I have no doubt that the king who is most illustrious for the remarkable learning which is added to the other distinctions of his royal majesty like a kind of: special splendor and grace, would easily answer the man in such a way that everyone would understand that, saving the reverence due his dignity, this excellent and very learned king had handled a pious cause vigorously and an impious scoundrel wittily. When Luther recognized this fact from the book which the king wrote against him to the great applause of all good men, to the great vexation of wicked men, he deliberately prepared his own book in such a manner that no mortal, still less the prince, would honor such crazy nonsense with any written answer. Thus he would be taking the last stand in the fight, doubtless appearing as the victor and conqueror."

"But," said my host, "I would like to see him deceived in that hope of his."

"What is the point?" I asked. "What will the one who answers him do but display to the world that Luther is a crafty buffoon? But this he himself has long ago proclaimed. What else has he proclaimed: in his work against Catharinus? What else against other learned men, against well-known schools? What else against the princes of Germany? Against the emperor, the king, the pope? What else has he proclaimed to the whole world from his Babylonian tower as from the loftiest height but that he is dedicated to hell, hateful to heaven, a noxious wretch to the human race, and finally of all mortals the most insolent and the most pestilential buffoon? For this reason I am wholly in agreement with the very sound counsel of that very shrewd 17

5

10

15

20

25

30

cardinal who persuaded the present pontiff, truly the holiest of men, that he should amend the decree of his predecessor Leo concerning the suppression of Luther's books in such a way as to forbid to the church completely the reading of those books which under the guise of holiness and moderation commend to good and simple men secretly implanted heresies. But the Babylon and books of that scurf, which contain nothing else but truly scurrilous railing and heresies abhorrent to the ears of all good men, the pope should permit to be sold and read everywhere. There is no danger whatever that any good man will be misled by a book of this sort which wrangles without reason and which lists rather than proves all the most impious doctrines and those most condemned by the common agreement of: the Christian world. Indeed, this advantage would result, that all the worst men, whom no edict can restrain from reading the works of heretics, will stop imposing on the unwary, whom at present they cleverly persuade-whenever they perceive that some point is offensive to good men-that Luther either did not write it or did not really mean it, but that he is an innocent man subject to false calumny by the ill will of envious men. I ask you: What will be the reaction of anyone on reading that work in which the scoundrel replies to the king, when he finds in it nothing rational, when he sees that all the arguments of the prince stand firm, when he observes that the fellow distorts many arguments, falsely concocts many, conceals the strongest ones, treats all of them jeeringly? Do you think that he will still desire any response to show the madness of the rascal; as though he should demand that a lamp be lighted to help him gaze at the sun?": "I grant you, my dear Ross," he said, "that the work does not

require an answer if one considers both sides of the question. But how many persons do you think will be so diligent in reading the work of Luther that they will detect his trickery by examining the book of the prince as well and comparing the actual words of each writer? Will they not rather from the work of one man pass judgment on the work: of both, being persuaded that no one would be such a shameless buffoon that he would deliberately distort the words of his opponent as this fellow continually does? We suspect this so much the less because such a trick can be easily exposed and because, once detected,: it brands its author with the deepest disgrace and indelible dishonor. Accordingly, if you will listen to me, you will not only reply but reply 19

5

10

15

20

25

30

fully. You will faithfully quote and compare the words of each writer; in your own comments you will render the virtues of Luther conspicuous so that every passage will stand out in which he either errs unconsciously, or slanders deliberately, or dissimulates stupidly, or plays the buffoon basely, or raves scurrilously, or lies shamelessly, or wrangles violently, or blasphemes impiously, or laughs frenziedly, or snarls in vexation, or bursts with rage, or sottishly sleeps, or when drunk snores deeply, or when sober and wakeful acts the madman. Nor do you have any reason to fear, my dear Ross, that, while you clean out the dungy writings of Luther like the Augean stable and cast his own filth back on him, you will at the same time defile your own name and fall into the danger of appearing to have had too little sense of honor and principle of moderation. For in the case of such an intemperate scoundrel who cannot restrain himself from scurrilous ranting either against men or against the saints, if anyone, instead of treating him in turn as he deserves should answer him with moderation and restraint, every just and God-fearing reader, believe me, will consider such moderation exceedingly ostentatious and completely immoderate. I know that you do not care a straw if the scoundrel should turn his pen against you.":

"That is true," I replied, "for I am not so foolish as to think it would be more praiseworthy for me to be praised by a praiseworthy man than for a man unworthy of praise to rave against me and bark at me with the same gaping jaws with which he rabidly barks at the saints."

"Why not, then," he said, "attack the work, relying on God. You will be doing something to gall wicked men, delight good men. You will not only manifest your sense of duty toward your prince, whose character, eloquence, learning, prudence, incomparable gifts of body and lofty powers of mind the Christian world regards with admiration and looks up to as the absolute model of royal distinction; but you will also gain great favor with Christ the Savior, whose name and faith this buffoon strives to destroy utterly under the pious pretence of defending them."

What would you have more, my dear John? He did not leave off urging me until he prevailed upon me. And so I promised I would do it; I did it; I showed it to him. He praised it beyond its deserved measure. He begged my permission to show it to several of his learned friends. I agreed, provided that no one would hurry it into publication

21

10

5

15

20

25

30

without my permission. I had determined not to take decisive steps on the matter for several months, so that I might investigate certain points more precisely, since I had completed the work in the country hastily without the assistance of books. Besides there had meanwhile appeared a copy of a letter written by the king to the dukes of Saxony from which I had begun to fear that the prince would not put up with it if any other Englishman should try his strength with that scoundrel. My host assured me that the work would remain in my control. He borrowed it, showed it to his friends, returned it to me, exhorted me not to delay publishing it. He said that the men to whom he had shown it, very learned men, had insisted forcefully to him that an edition should be hurried out without my knowledge or consent, but that he had kept his word. Still he urged, advised, begged me not to delay yielding to the entreaties of the learned men nor to allow the scoundrel any longer to abuse the ignorance and inexperience of simple men. On the supposition that there might perhaps be some men who would think the nonsense that he wrote to be of some worth, I promised to attend to it. I determined to send the book to you at once so that on the question of publishing or suppressing this work I might have the benefit of your judgment, since I had found your advice helpful on many other occasions. Accordingly, I turned: the book over to Herman of Prague, a young man once very much attached to you when he was studying in England. He had seen that England had been a profitable place for his teacher. So, although it: did not seem either proper or useful to leave his own country immediately, he decided to return to Britain, being determined and resolved to establish residence there. For several months after his departure, therefore, I was in suspense, waiting from day to day for your reply about my work. But when I realized from the letter which you sent here on May 23 that the book had not been delivered and that its bearer had not reached England, fearing that something had happened to the young man-for of his trustworthiness I have no doubt even yet-I was preparing another copy so that I might send it to you there at the first opportunity, when, behold, in the meantime it was reported here that my book was already out for sale and-what amazes me-that someone has been found who has acknowledged the work unpolished as it was and produced it as his own. This business was perhaps carried out the more boldly since I, in sending the work to you as from one acquaintance to another, had not affixed my name

23

5

10

15

20

25

30

to the work. This is how I think it happened that a compassionate man received it as a child cast off by an unknown father and brought it out as his own. But now I beg you, my dear John: see to it that the child is recognized there, but not the father until you have carefully observed in the meantime what hope it offers its parent concerning 5 itself. If good men disapprove of it, or if the prince is vexed that anyone else from England engages in combat with that buffoon, let him who acknowledged the work enjoy that effect. But if, as we hope, learned and good men are pleased with it, and you sense that the king will not be vexed that we too have thoroughly flogged the 10 scoundrel, then, my dear John, I beg of you that, without any reproach for him who as it were received the orphan, you lay claim to and restore again to me, its father, my offspring which was never exposed by me but by some fortune or other was shipwrecked on some unknown shore. Farewell from the city; for I returned here yesterday 15 to set my affairs in order. Again farewell and God bless you. August 3.

#### JOHN CARCELLIUS SENDS BEST GREETINGS: TO HIS FRIEND WILLIAM ROSS

On the tenth of September, your letter was delivered to me. I was 5 very pleased to receive it and read it through carefully again and again. Your letters, indeed, never fail to please me, but this time it was even a delight, in so far as one can feel delight in my situation. First of all it provided me with the news I most longed to hear; that is, that you who are dearer to me than anyone are safe and well, even though somewhat disturbed by fear of the plague which is raging 10 there and growing more virulent everywhere, and that you have found in Italy also persons who recognize your virtues, and admire them, and honor them with the favor they deserve. Secondly, having satisfied by the reading of your letter my long-felt desire of knowing what you were doing, with which I was tortured before as with a prolonged 15 thirst, my mind was somewhat at ease. For I was terribly afraid that: some misfortune had befallen you, since for so many months I had: received no word from you. Indeed it is almost a year since I received from you the letter in which you informed me of your trip to Rome. And now for the first time since then I hear where you are, what you 20 are doing, and how you are feeling. This fact was quite distressing to me, as it should have been, considering our mutual affection. And I: was the more worried about you because I could not learn anything: from the public couriers from your area, although when it came to all our other countrymen they could tell me where each one was staying. 25 You write that you gave Herman a letter and a book for me. Indeed, he has not come here, and I have never heard what has happened to him since his departure from us, which was immediately after the death of his teacher, although I have often inquired about him from those who studied together with him-there are several of them here 30 at London. And indeed I was certainly fond of the young man on account of his unusually fine character, his considerable learning, and above all his singular and proven loyalty, which made him very dear: to his teacher. If he had remained or returned here I would have found him some satisfactory position. Now I am afraid that some 35 more serious reason than his own unwillingness has kept such a worthy young man from keeping his promise. Nonetheless, your

book was finally delivered; I wish it had arrived earlier! To tell the truth I was astounded by it, because the name of another author had already fixed itself in the belief of everyone who had seen the work, to say nothing of myself. Even when I held your sheets in my hands I could still hardly recognize my dear Ross in them. I was like men who are suddenly thrown into consternation by the great and unexpected novelty of some incident, whether good or bad. They hang in doubt for a long time and cannot quickly convince themselves of a fact which is either more disagreeable than they would wish or more delightful than they could hope. In the same way it seemed to me amazing and almost unbelievable that the claim to this most excellent work had been transferred so unexpectedly, so suddenly to a new owner, and that to a person whom I was least expecting, though I was particularly desirous that he be the author of such an illustrious work, both for the sake of our common fatherland and for the sake of our personal friendship. Of course I knew and others: judged that you are quite equal to and even superior to your elders,: but as I have said, another person had so shrewdly insinuated himself into this possession as though it had been abandoned that it seemed: with perfect justice to be his.

Now, as for the work itself, the many learned and good men to whom I showed it judged it to be of such value that, with the greatest interest on the part of everyone, it has been printed again in this country. I personally liked it so much-if my judgment is of any: value to you-that, since it was written straight through without interruption, I divided it into chapters, adding titles to each, wrote marginal glosses, and added an index so that single details might be found more easily by the readers. Thus I relieve you of your worry as to what the judgment of the learned would be about the work. Indeed, they urged me no less earnestly to publish here than, as I understand from your letter, you were persuaded to do there. Some, of their own accord, even promised to subsidize its publication, since the printers are reluctant to undertake a project if there is no one to underwrite the expense of it for them. As for the king, we have nothing to fear. Since he is a man of remarkable learning and most refined judgment, I do not doubt that he will have the same opinion: of your book as other men of learning have had. When Luther's book was first brought here and shown to him, he did nothing but laugh at the scoundrel's foolish and scurrilous abuse. When asked what he

29

5

10

15

20

25

30

thought of that fellow who was not only impious but raving mad as well, he answered that he indeed thought Luther deserved to pay the price for his wantonness and wickedness, and to be brought out at every banquet so that the arrant fool might entertain the banqueters. As for answering the fellow's whorish railing, however, he would not so defile his own person as to engage the fellow in a contest of abuse nor would he so waste his time and trouble on trifles as to deal moderately and reasonably with one who had declared war on all reason and moderation. But neither would he urge anyone to engage in further personal combat with the man. Still, if anyone wished to refute his madness and to bridle his unbridled tongue, the prince would not forbid it. And so I have taken care of publishing the book in your name,

and of claiming it for its own author as if by right of recovery. Moreover, I carefully compared the copy I received from you with other copies, and where I found something either changed or further added by you which was not contained in our copies, I arranged to have it added. Of those details which I myself had already carefully worked out I changed nothing, lest dropping them would involve a great expense to me and the printer. Nor will I change them after this if you approve what I have done. If you think otherwise, however, I will confirm whatever you decide. In addition, I have set at the beginning, in place of a preface, the letter which you sent to me and in which you present the book to me; such is your love for me. To it I have added this letter of mine, so that later readers also may understand how much I owe to you. Good-bye. Greet for me our common friends there. Again, good-bye. September 17. 31

5

10

15

20

The preface written by Luther: to a certain Bohemian noble,: in which he betrays his malice and spite toward the pope, as well as toward the emperor and all the princes of Germany, all of whom the shameless fellow assails with the most shameless railing and reviling.	5
To the Eminent and Noble: Lord Sebastian Schlick,: Count of Bassano, Lord of Elbogen, etc. and his elder in Christ, Martin Luther, the Ecclesiastes of Wittenberg.	10
Grace and peace in Christ. For more than three years, noble count, the raging rabble of papists have been accusing me of a flight to Bohemia. They have a surprising thirst to hear this charge, being of course pretty fellows, and are ready at this sole rumor to triumph, to boast, to proclaim: "We have conquered, the heretic has fled to the heretics. <sup>8</sup> " That	15
brainless and illiterate beast in papist form is thus tormented and galled to see itself conquered by learning and truth and the whole filthy pack of its asses unable to stand against Luther alone. Gasping: out with every breath that I flee into Bohemia, they try to solace themselves at least with the opprobrium of another's name, and they	20
make themselves out to be frightful Emims, though because of their stupidity and bad conscience they dare not appear anywhere. I have appeared before them for the third time now; in fact, I entered Worms even though I knew that the safe-conduct promised me had been violated by the emperor. For the:	25
princes of Germany, once a race most highly praised for its fidelity, have now: learned nothing more in subservience to: the Roman idol than to contemn fidelity; to the lasting ignominy of the nation. <sup>9</sup> Thus Luther dared, though	30
exiled and fearful, to leap into the circle of the Behemoth's teeth. But what did those dreaded giants do?	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>8</sup> Spoken most truly
<sup>9</sup> The most perfidious scoundrel fixes on the emperor the brand of perfidy. That the princes of Germany contemn fidelity

During this whole period of three years, there has not been found	35
one man who would come to us at Wittenberg and stand before us	
also, although they are most assured of security and defense. They	
would of course be doing everything under the protection of their	
emperor. Even yet these effeminate and senseless men dare to hope	5
for triumph from my flight, intending to credit their own most	
shameful ignominy, which proclaims throughout the world that	
because of their ignorance and fearfulness of spirit they dare not	
present themselves before Luther alone. What do you think these	
fragile bubbles would do if they themselves were forced to take a	10
stand before a hostile emperor and overpowering enemies? These	
wretched fellows would undoubtedly flee into a thousand alleys, who	
now like shrew-mice chatter in their holes: "Luther plans flight."	
So also the king of England in this book gibbers a lot of drivel about	
my flight into Bohemia; a wise man, indeed, who believes that his	15
book is victorious and fitly written, if Luther has fled to the Bohemians.	
So silly and womanish is the spite of the doltish king. But however	
much my soul longs to see Bohemia and the	
religion so hateful to the papist monsters, <sup>10</sup>	
nevertheless I have till now refrained and:	20
I will refrain from doing so. It is not that I fear the opprobrium of	
the name which the vilest dregs of men, the papists, have branded	
with supreme perfidy and injustice on a most honored nation.	
With very just reason did the Bohemians desert these murderers	
and Antichrist papists when the latter,:	25
themselves sevenfold heretics, burned the:	
innocent John Hus and sacrilegiously con-:	
demned the communion under both kinds:	
instituted by Christ. <sup>11</sup> Such are the causes of the papist hatred for this	
nation, nor do the bastards of that purple harlot ever admit their	30
cruel murder and the sacrilege of condemning the gospel; rather,	
they proceed to defend their madness and to impose on another and	
innocent people the opprobrium with which they themselves are	
marked before God.:	
I do not, therefore, fear the opprobrium of the Bohemian name,	35
which is a glory before God; rather, Christ has placed me here to	
torment the papist monsters, while they can find nothing against me	
such as they would like to flaunt in breathing out their unbelievable	
spite. Christ wishes them to be tortured by their own spite and to	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>10</sup> Luther's partiality to the Bohemians<sup>11</sup> He accuses everyone of heresy except himself and Hus, the most notorious heretics

burst with their own malice. Therefore, I look out for them here, and I will look out for their most violent hatred; I intend to exasperate them thoroughly and torment them as long as I live. But if they slay me. I will torture them so much the more. For I have been given to them as a sign by my Lord Christ, so that	5
whether they let me live or whether they: slay me, <sup>12</sup> their raging conscience will have no grace, no peace, no comfort. Thus they will be consumed by a twofold grief, and through the torture of their present spite they will merit the eternal torment of gehenna. The death of the abominable papacy is imminent; its in- eluctable fate besets it. As Daniel said, "It has come to its end and no one will help it." Thus, we rush to the battle from both sides, they with extreme madness, I with supreme:	10
contempt, and my boldness shall conquer: in Christ their final madness, <sup>13</sup> even now	15:
pale with death. As a matter of fact, I am contemplating a different kind of flight into Bohemia, so that the prophecy of the papist pythons may not be completely false; but from this flight they will suffer a greater spirit of remorse, in accordance with Moses' words: "I will arouse them to anger among a people not a nation, and I will incite them to envy among a foolish people." Through the mercy of Christ I shall shortly accomplish so much by my books that, with the Bohemians free from	20
their disgrace, the papists alone will be a name of abomination in the world, so that:	25
it will be a curse and anathema to be a: papist. <sup>14</sup> Not that I approve the Bohemians in every respect, since I am unacquainted with their teachings and I hear that there are sects among them; but that compared to them the papist rabble will be a stinking nausea in the whole world. These latter are nothing but sects, so much so that the Franciscans alone are divided among them- selves into about six sects.	30
I write these things to you, noble sir, in order to secure the beginning of my flight with you who govern on the borders of Bohemia next to Germany, so that through you and your authority I may advance into all Bohemia. The king, a layman, wrote to his most	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup> He threatens to be a cacodaemon
<sup>13</sup> This so-called devout man professes himself contemptuous and bold
<sup>14</sup> How shrewdly he praises when he is eager to flatter

holy pontiff; it was fitting that I, once a	
cleric by the favor of the pope, should write	
to a most Christian layman. <sup>15</sup> I hear that	
you are inflamed with extraordinary zeal for the pure truth of the	
gospel and that everywhere in your domain you are utterly destroying	5
the abominations and scandals of the Roman pestilence. Continue	
courageously, noble sir; in this way the disgrace of the Bohemian	
name will be abolished, and the sludge of the harlot's lies and whor-	
ings shall return into her bosom, so that her infamy shall be revealed	
to the world, to her everlasting shame. Let this be the beginning of	10
my flight, this hope of an excellent model for the rest of the Bohemian	
lords and magistrates to imitate. Thus, I will not only have fled into	
Bohemia, but I shall have dwelt there, even if the rage of the ignoble	
harlot shall have burned me here. Her spite, nevertheless, I shall at	
the same time kindle and conquer in Christ. She shall no longer	15
prosper. Christ has so decreed. Amen. The grace of our Lord Jesus	
Christ forever preserve and bless you, most noble sir. Amen.	
Wittenberg, July 5, 1522.	

\_\_\_\_

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>15</sup> All the men most alienated from the church are most Christian to Luther

### AN ANSWER IS MADE TO LUTHER'S EPISTLE WRITTEN AT THE BEGINNING OF THE WORK. CHAPTER 1

This whole epistle breathes Luther's Thrasonic vainglory and the scoundrel's malicious spite toward the authority of the Roman See. Not long ago he execrated the condemned heresies of the Bohemians. Now, consumed by spite, himself subject to execration, and con-	5
demned by his own judgment of himself, he applauds the Bohemians and pretends to be ignorant of their heresies; a man either so unfair that he censures their teachings before knowing them, or of such a weak memory that he has now suddenly forgotten all those teachings which he so recently condemned with such severity. And yet, since his main surpose is to flatter them this wise man after some words of	10
his main purpose is to flatter them, this wise man, after some words of praise, finally promises them—good God, what an honor!—the glory	
of Sodom and Gomorrha. <sup>16</sup> For as the con-	15
duct of these cities was justified by com-	
parison with that of Jerusalem, so Luther	
will justify the heresies of the Bohemians by comparing them,	
indeed, with the faith of Christ. That he may the more freely attack	
and blaspheme this faith, he everywhere refers to it as "papist," sub-	20
stituting for the faith of Christ his own lack of faith. For since he	
scorns the Jewish faith, mocks that of the pagans, vacillates on that	
of the Bohemians, hardly allows that of the Turks, and condemns al-	
together the Catholic faith, what has he finally left fixed and unwaver-	
ing but his own faithlessness? He so proudly exults in this and insults	25
everyone that no one can doubt how completely he breathes out	
upon earth the hellish spirit of him whom a similar pride cast down	
from heaven to hell.	
But it will be worth while to consider the boastful bombast of that	20
epistle. From the very beginning he rails at the emperor and the	30
German princes; he boasts of his own	
courage in daring to go to Worms, know-	
ing that his safe-conduct had been violated; <sup>17</sup> clearly a man with spirit	
set on martyrdom for the sake of his faithlessness without charity,	35
without which, as Paul testifies, not even for the true faith would	55
martyrdom have had value. He pompously taunts all whose judgment does not coincide with his own; that is, all good men, saying that no	
does not confere with his own, that is, all good men, saying that no	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>16</sup> What sort of praise Luther gives the Bohemians

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>17</sup> Luther's boasting

one dares go to Wittenberg to stand before his majesty, although of course they are most assured of security and defense, for, as he says, they would be doing everything under the protection of the emperor. As if there were no robbers on the way, almost the only bodyguard which Luther has, who would not hesitate for the sake of their faction to destroy through ambush in defiance of public protection those who would come to dispute with Luther, doing this in the same spirit with which for the sake of their own gain they rob and cut down travellers in defiance of public law.

When he came to Worms, he had nothing to fear. He had come, as he admits, under safe-conduct. If, as the scoundrel pretends, the emperor had violated this safe-conduct, by what protection would the friarlet most deserving of every punishment, with the emperor hostile to him, with the German princes, as he complains, betraying him, after journeying so many miles by carriage along a public highway, openly, in broad daylight, have thus escaped unharmed? No doubt: he wishes us to think that it was of him the text was written: "God has given His angels charge over you, lest perhaps you dash your foot against a stone." On the contrary, the wicked were protecting the wicked, and the good were unwilling to violate the safe-conduct. On the other hand, those who would come to oppose Luther need fear only the wicked and treacherous men whom no obligation of a safeconduct restrains from crime, against whom no provision for a bodyguard can afford sufficient protection on such a long journey. Since this is so, it is surely strange that, although Luther dared at no danger to himself to come to Worms into the presence of the princes, so that: he might safely report home to his pot-fellows the triumph of his obstinate madness, yet no one, on the other hand, dares to come at the peril of his life to Wittenberg, especially since he can expect such great results. He will contend with the scoundrel in his own theater, where the seats have been packed with scoundrels who, as their heresiarch twists the words of scripture to: an adulterated meaning,<sup>18</sup> as he jeers at the: authority of all the learned men of anti-: quity, as he hisses at the public faith of so many ages, and as he curses all that is holy, at each blasphemy will applaud and repeat, "Bravo!" But at each word of the one who would: come to dispute with Luther,<sup>19</sup> with shouting,: grimacing, stomping, pounding, they will

5

10

15

20

25

30

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>18</sup> How fruitless it is to dispute with Luther personally

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>19</sup> How much danger he undertakes who would dispute with Luther

interrupt him, hoot at him, hiss him off the stage. If he will persist in the face of all this and overcome their shouts with reason, they will finally kill him on his departure.

Things are not what they were once, when Eck was disputing. For then, because the movement was still at the stage when men strongly 5 favored their own sect and did not yet clearly realize what a bad cause they were fostering, they used to listen more quietly and eagerly because they were hoping to hear what they were very eager to hear.: But that disputation in no way answered their hopes, although nevertheless there were certain points apparently not altogether un-10 acceptable. Now that they see he has later in his madness added such points as he can in no way defend, they despair of a victory of reason and place their triumph in unreason, unwilling to listen with unprejudiced ears to anything which contradicts their prejudiced minds. And yet, I do not deny that in the very city in which he has chosen his 15 hiding place there are many very honorable men, many good and pious women; but in times of unrest the mad rabble of troublemakers stands out more than the even greater number of good and peace-loving citizens. Luther laments that,20: despite the books he has published, his mad: 20 heresies have been so overwhelmed and: refuted that he never hears himself acclaimed as victor among his own followers without at the same time being inwardly rent by the consciousness of his own disgrace. He knows that all peoples everywhere, by comparing the books from either side, perceive with utter 25 clarity how shamefully overthrown and prostrate he lies. Wearied at last, and shrinking from a public trial, yet intending to fight, he challenges his foes cock-like to his own dung hill, where he may crow before his hens. But I think no one is so senseless as to enter the place to which his 30 enemy summons him for a fight, since there cannot be a more level plain for the struggle, or one less exposed to ambush, than a controversy carried on by means of published books,<sup>21</sup> in which neither side can pretend, either that any 35 point was falsely kept from the record by the secretaries, or later corrupted by forgers, or that anything had escaped him unforeseen in:

the heat of a hurried disputation. Rather, what he will have brought forward in the most ordered fashion—whatever he is able to bring

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>20</sup> Why Luther challenges men to dispute with him in person

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>21</sup> Why the disputation should be carried on in writing rather than in person

will with honest fidelity appear in public. From these considerations,	
it is now most clearly evident, and from day to day will become more	
evident, how the glorious conqueror and victor, Luther, lies prostrate:	
in foul filth, smeared with mud, coated with dung. Although the	5
king's book has accomplished this result so thoroughly that nothing:	
has ever goaded Luther to an equal frenzy, I will make all Lutherans	
understand from the present book how doltish a heresiarch they have,	
who has accomplished nothing else by his wisdom than to fix more	
deeply with his own hands the weapon thrust into him by his oppo-	10
nent. Before I take up the book, however, I should like for a short	
time to return with Luther to Worms. By his boastful mention of this:	
city he has recalled a certain incident to my memory, from which one	
instance the whole world can judge the doltish character and the	
ambition-crazed mind of this most conceited scoundrel.	15
Luther's foolish vanity is exposed from his exaggerated	
praise of himself under an assumed name.	
Chapter 2	
*	
There has been published a booklet entitled: The Acts and Proceedings of	
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms.	20
	20
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it	20
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms.	20
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra-	20
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain	20 25
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain indications. For example, whereas the emperor is everywhere desig-	
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain	
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain indications. For example, whereas the emperor is everywhere desig- nated simply as "Charles," Luther is never named except in a rever-:	
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain indications. For example, whereas the emperor is everywhere desig- nated simply as "Charles," Luther is never named except in a rever-: ent manner as "THE HONORED MARTIN" in capital letters,	
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain indications. For example, whereas the emperor is everywhere desig- nated simply as "Charles," Luther is never named except in a rever-: ent manner as "THE HONORED MARTIN" in capital letters, clearly indicating a great hero. At times he is referred to as, "Luther,:	
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain indications. For example, whereas the emperor is everywhere desig- nated simply as "Charles," Luther is never named except in a rever-: ent manner as "THE HONORED MARTIN" in capital letters, clearly indicating a great hero. At times he is referred to as, "Luther,: the man of God." And whereas those who address him are said to	25
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain indications. For example, whereas the emperor is everywhere desig- nated simply as "Charles," Luther is never named except in a rever-: ent manner as "THE HONORED MARTIN" in capital letters, clearly indicating a great hero. At times he is referred to as, "Luther,: the man of God." And whereas those who address him are said to break out into virulent words, Luther himself is described as follows:	25
the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms. This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain indications. For example, whereas the emperor is everywhere desig- nated simply as "Charles," Luther is never named except in a rever-: ent manner as "THE HONORED MARTIN" in capital letters, clearly indicating a great hero. At times he is referred to as, "Luther,: the man of God." And whereas those who address him are said to break out into virulent words, Luther himself is described as follows: "But the honored Martin in his extraordinary gentleness and good-	25
<i>the Honored Martin Luther, Augustinian, at the Diet of the Princes at Worms.</i> This booklet does not indicate where it was printed nor by whom it was compiled. But it is quite clear from the very course of the narra- tion that the author was someone very devoted to Luther. That it was: not compiled by Luther himself, however, there are very certain indications. For example, whereas the emperor is everywhere desig- nated simply as "Charles," Luther is never named except in a rever-: ent manner as "THE HONORED MARTIN" in capital letters, clearly indicating a great hero. At times he is referred to as, "Luther,: the man of God." And whereas those who address him are said to break out into virulent words, Luther himself is described as follows: "But the honored Martin in his extraordinary gentleness and good- ness answered mildly." And in this way: <sup>22</sup>	25

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>22</sup> Note this

for His church together with His word this most pious man born to defend and teach the gospel. Amen."	
What man has ever been born so suspicious as to be able to suspect that the man who wrote such words about Luther was himself Luther? What Thraso was ever so vainglor- ious that he would not be ashamed even: to think in such a manner about himself? <sup>23</sup> But please observe, reader, how completely the titillation of vainglory has driven out the man's memory and mind. When the whole work has been so handled that:	5:
one can consider it the work of some other person, suddenly the shrewmouse betrays itself by its squeak. <sup>24</sup> : For forgetting himself, he says in a certain:	10
passage: At these words, the speaker for the emperor, as though rebuking me,:	
said that I had not answered to the point and that things should not be called into doubt which had once been condemned and defined in councils; therefore I was asked to give a simple, not a sophistical, answer to the question whether I was willing to retract or not. To this I replied: Since the emperor's majesty etc.	15
Here you see, reader, from the proceedings at Worms, that extra- ordinary modesty of the most gentle father, who under the mask of another trumpeter so modestly trumpets his own praise. <sup>25</sup> You see the admirable	20
shrewdness of the man who in so slight a book could not avoid betray-: ing a design so foolish that even a fool would be ashamed of it.	25
With such blindness and madness has our: Lord Jesus Christ stricken that whole <sup>26</sup> : realm of papist abomination that for three whole years now these in- numerable crowds of Cyclopes fighting with Luther alone cannot yet	30
understand why I am at war with them.	50

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>23</sup> Luther's Thrasonic vainglory
<sup>24</sup> Luther forgets himself
<sup>25</sup> Luther's modesty
<sup>26</sup> Luther's words

# Luther's mad intention and design are revealed. Chapter 3.

He says of all those who acknowledge the pope, that is, all the Italians, Spaniards, French, Germans, and all Christian people everywhere, all of whom he calls Cyclopes, that although they have been fighting so long with Luther alone, a Ulysses indeed of consummate shrewdness, <sup>27</sup> they have their	5
eyes gouged out like Polyphemus so that, despite the many books he has published, they still cannot determine where he is heading. What a difficult matter! It would require, not an eyeless Cyclops, but some many-eyed Argos and Lynceus to trace Luther's paths. It would perhaps be a difficult matter to trace the path of a snake over the ground, except that by its	10
offensive odor breaking out wherever it turns and creeps along and by its loathsome corruption infecting the earth it betrays itself only too well. Neither, then, is any one of these Cyclopes so blind that he cannot detect the tricks and shifts of this fellow, with what a worthless subterfuge he prepares himself for flight from Aetna so that, having escaped from this island of the Cyclopes, as he calls them, he heads	15
straight for hell. <sup>28</sup> But from there no Tiresias may lead him back.	20
They do not understand, he says. <sup>29</sup> In vain: have I published so many books plainly: testifying that I seek only that the divine scriptures should have sole rule, as is meet and just, but that human inventions and traditions should be abolished as most pernicious scandals, or with their poison: cut out and their sting removed, that is, with their power of forcing and commending and appearing consciences taken away they should	25
and commanding and ensnaring consciences taken away, they should: be tolerated freely as things neither good nor bad, just as with any other plague or misfortune of the world. These people, violently agitated by incessant madness, advance no argument against me but: the decrees of men, the glosses of the fathers, and the practices or	30
customs of the ages; in other words, those very things which I reject: and impugn, which even they themselves admit are untrustworthy. I argue <i>de jure;</i> they answer me <i>de facto</i> . I seek a reason; they show me a work. I ask: "By what power do you do this?" They answer: "Because: this is the way we are doing it, and this is the way we have done it."	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>27</sup> Luther is indeed another Ulysses
<sup>28</sup> Where Luther is heading
<sup>29</sup> Luther's words

Let will take the place of reason, observance the place of authority, custom the place of law, and that in matters pertaining to God. These men have in their schools a most corrupt manner of disputing, which they call "begging the question." This the wretched men learn and teach even to gray hairs, even to the grave, with extreme effort and expense.	5
And of the king shortly after:	
But this god, growing shockingly arrogant in his new divinity and certain that whatever he has said ought to happen or has happened, goes further and explicitly testifies that he wishes to dismiss my funda- mental principle, leaving it for others to attack, and to overthrow only the superstructure; that is, to fight with straw and hay against the rock of God's word. You would not know whether madness itself could be so mad or dullness itself so dull as is our blockhead Henry.	10
Perhaps this is to verify the proverb: "Kings and fools are born—not made." What fool would say: "I declare that there are seven sacra- ments, but I shall leave untouched the principal argument of my opponent"? You would think this book were published by a noted enemy of the king to the king's lasting disgrace.	15
A summary of the matter to be treated in the whole work. Chapter 4.	20
These very words of Luther, reader, on which he so excessively plumes himself, not only are absolutely false but contain almost as many errors as there are words. A little later when I come to what he calls:	
his general response I will demonstrate this fact according to proofs taken from the king's book, so that anyone may readily perceive it. Besides this, I will show not only that the scoundrel does away with all the traditions of men, even those which he ought to obey, but also that he does away with the traditions of God. And nevertheless not	25
content with this, he attacks by means of every possible stratagem those very scriptures of God for the sovereign authority of which he pretends to fight. In that passage I will make clear how foolishly he ridicules the royal majesty's method of disputing, which consists of opposing to the authority of a single buffoon the authority of so many	30
holy fathers, the custom of so many centuries and the public faith of	35

the whole Church. At the same time I will also make clear that the faulty method of disputing by begging the question, which he attrib- utes to others with so much insolence, is his own sole and almost only form of disputing. Moreover, I will show that he falls into this practice especially in the very passages in which he most fiercely reproaches and upbraids others for it. Then, at the point suited to the purpose, we shall winnow those words in which he boasts of himself so inordinately that he overwhelms his readers with darkness, and we shall context with the winnowing wind this	5
shall scatter with the winnowing wind this chaff that he labors to sell for grain. <sup>30</sup> This	10
obviously witty and facetious fellow jeers at:	
the king for explicitly testifying, when about to defend the sacraments, that he will leave Luther's chief foundation for others to	
attack and that he himself will tear down only the superstructure	
built on that foundation. This will be touched on in the only passage	15
which suits it, where Luther keeps repeating the same argument	
seasoned always with a similar salt; that is, where we will treat the argument that for Luther the mass cannot be a good work, an obla-	
tion, or a sacrifice, because it is, as he says, a testament. There you will	
see, reader, that the witless witticisms of this man of such merry humor	20
make sport of Luther alone. I set down as separate points these things	
that I now promise to do for you, so that you can require each of them from me in its own place. I put myself in your debt for them, so	
that if I do not discharge in this booklet all that I have promised I	
may be thought to have discharged nothing at all, content to have	25
Luther chant over and over at me these words of Horace: "What will	
this braggart produce worthy of such pompous language?"	
He answers Luther's pretense of not believing that the	
king's book was written by the king himself, and at the	
same time he shows what distinguished authors the book	30
of Luther has. Chapter 5.	
Meanwhile I shall briefly run through those incidental objections to	
Luther from which the wise man makes such efforts to extricate him-	
self that in doing so he more and more implicates and involves him-	
self. But first, the following.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>30</sup> He compares Luther's doctrines to chaff

He thought he would doubtless exasperate the king exceedingly if	
he pretended not to believe that the book published by the king was	
the king's own, but clearly Lee's, or some phlegmatic sophist's, as he	
calls him. As if anyone were so phlegmatic, Luther, as not to prefer the	
phlegm of any person whatever who is not completely raving to your	5
raving bile.	
This scoundrel is painfully tormented by the fact that the royal	
majesty's learning in almost all disciplines and especially in theology	
is too well known and, in other lands besides Britain, too celebrated	
for the dolt to be able to persuade anyone that the most wise king	10
wished to seek renown through another man's book at the expense of	
a frenzied friarlet. I think the king would rather consider it inglorious	
to contend with him than glorious to conquer him, especially in such	
a contest as, while it would always be intrinsically noteworthy, he yet	
new would be rendered notorious by the folly of his opponent. Nor,	15
I think, would the prince have written anything at all against such a	
buffoon except that for the honor of Christ	
he considered nothing a dishonor to him-	
self; <sup>31</sup> but just as for the honor of Christ's	
name he would not decline to fight against the basest of infidels, if	20
that were his fortune, so for the faith of Christ he deigned to fight with	
his pen against the most foolish of heretics.	
But I see what Luther wants: he wishes everyone to believe about	
the king's book what he is aware of with regard to his own, and what	
everyone knows was done in his own book. For who does not know	25
that this fellow's response was not the labor of any one man? What	
single head could ever have begotten such a great mass of follies? By	
heaven, frenzy itself would have been exhausted from giving birth	
incessantly to so much crazy nonsense. But, as is quite well known,	
the lusts of many madly raving scoundrels have engendered this	30
shapeless and monstrous offspring of Luther. As at their drinking bouts	
each one is accustomed to pay his scot, so into this book, a farrago of	
follies, each of the foolish triflers by common design contributed his	
own foolish expression. When Luther had received the king's book	
and had tasted some of it, the wholesome food began to grow bitter to	35
his perverted taste. Since he was not able to gulp it down, wishing	
then to get rid of its bitterness by tippling,	
he convoked an assembly of his fellow-	
tipplers. <sup>32</sup> There, although he would have preferred the work to be	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>31</sup> The supreme goodness of the king<sup>32</sup> An assembly of pot-fellows

hidden in everlasting darkness, yet, because it could not be concealed, he reluctantly brought out the book, after strongly fortifying his spirit by draining his cups. Once the reading started, it began to grate on their asinine ears with biting truth. They therefore close the book, and then soon reopen it. Now they leaf through it to see if they may per- haps discover something which they can reasonably carp at. Nothing occurs convenient to cavil. Now, as in situations of crisis, opinions are sought. The assembly began to be dejected, and things began to look desperate for Luther, except that some	5
Bitias <sup>33</sup> skillfully consoled him, saying: What difference did it make to them what the: king of England had written, or why did they have to consider honesty at all, since they had no purpose but to agitate a noisy rebel- lion and become famous as the ringleaders of a faction? Thus they	10:
would exact money from the seduction of the simple and pleasure from the provoca- tion of the more learned. <sup>34</sup> Therefore, what did it hurt how truly the king writes or how shrewdly he refutes their heresies? Let Luther just reply and pursue his usual way: let him be quick to rail and mock. It	15
would be enough for them to impose on and dominate the simple folk. <sup>35</sup> How few of these would either wish to reconsider the whole matter from the begin- ning or would be able to evaluate it, once reconsidered? So let him not be disheartened nor at any rate so foolish as to decide that the	20
battle must be waged by reason; all that needed to be employed were reproaches and insults on every page, thicker than winter snow, of which an inexhaustible stream would gush forth from Luther's breast. With these weapons Luther would be safe; with them he could both strike and keep himself from being struck in return. The	25
generous soul of the king would be indignant that such things were said against himself by such men; it would grieve the souls of all honorable men that the scoundrels were allowed to get away with so much unpunished. If anyone should write a stern and severe answer, the common people would contemn it, which would be enough for	30
Luther. If, on the contrary, someone should determine to make a retort that fit Luther, he would act ridiculously; for, spoken against a man whose person is fouler than every kind of reproach, his words will have no effect. But neither would anyone be equal to Luther, who could take on single-handed ten of the most garrulous and brawling	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>33</sup> Bitias, a toper in the first book of the Aeneid
<sup>34</sup> The purpose of the Lutherans
<sup>35</sup> The prompt advice of Bitias

whores. And yet his pot-fellows themselves, each according to his ability, would not fail to help him, and thus the victory would easily be his.

On being given this advice, Luther began to recover his spirit, which had already almost escaped through the rear. But because he saw that he needed more than his usual brawling, since indeed he had not a single other weapon to employ in the disputation, he urged them each to hurry to the place where they could hunt out the greatest possible matter of stupid brawls and scurrilous scoffs. When each had collected a bagful of these, he should bring it immediately to Luther, for from them he would stuff full his own farrago of a response. With this charge he dismisses the assembly.:

They then go off in different directions, each to the place that his spirit suggests, and they scatter among all the carts, carriages, boats, baths, brothels, barber shops, taverns, whorehouses, mills, privies, 15 and stews. There they diligently observe and set down in their note-: books whatever a coachman spoke ribaldly, or a servant insolently, or a porter lewdly, or a parasite jeeringly, or a whore wantonly, or a pimp indecently, or a bath-keeper filthily, or a shitter obscenely. After hunting for several months, then, finally, all that they had collected 20 from any place whatever, railings, brawlings, scurrilous scoffs, wantonness, obscenities, dirt, filth, muck, shit, all this sewage they stuff into the most foul sewer of Luther's breast. All this he vomited up through that foul mouth into that railers' book of his, like devoured dung. From there, reader, you receive that accumulated mass of 25 indecent brawlings, with which alone the utterly foolish book is filled. When he tries to say anything to the point, just remove that very ornate mosaic of scurrility; immediately you will see, reader, how slight a handful of substance remains from such a great heap of words, and yet even that is corrupted. That this may become clearer to you, 30 come, let us examine, as I was about to do, those errors, briefly objected to in passing, which he volubly strives to disclaim. It will be fairly easy to infer how he behaves in attacking another since he so prettily defends himself.

61

5

He refutes the shameless deception of Luther, who falsely writes that the king cites no instance of his contradiction but only declares in a word that Luther is inconsistent. Chapter 6.	
Before we come to the point at issue, he says, <sup>36</sup> I will first exonerate myself of two: charges which the Thomistic king in his womanish fury lays against me. Of these, the first is that I am inconsistent.	5
In order to exonerate himself of this charge, therefore, as though with a profound awareness of his innocence, he pompously reviews the catalogue of his published books, lest anyone be ignorant of the names of those poisons with which the poison-maker has tried to infect the Christian people. Anyone who carefully examines these same books	10
will find so many, such evident, such absurd contradictions that he will think Luther has done nothing else by this review of his books than if he had slit the throat of a man in the sight of he people, and then, when sum- moned to trial, produced as witnesses of his innocence all those people who had been the spectators of his crime. <sup>37</sup>	15
But here, I suppose, he will demand that I present some examples of those inconsistencies, that I draw a flask from this sea; as though it were necessary to point out what everyone sees; or as though Ambrose Catharinus, <sup>38</sup> a most learned man,: did not long ago point out to him many:	20
instances; and as though some were not pointed out in the king's book itself. If I did produce many of them at this point, as I can, Luther would not be ashamed—such is the fellow's horror of evil—to pretend once more that none had been produced and to demand once again that some examples be produced. Although, as I have said, the most	25
learned Ambrose Catharinus presented many instances of that kind, Luther then, like an ape, answered several instances with derisive laughter. The rest, however, were so obvious that not even from his wealth of scurrilous scoffs was he able to find any argument against them. <sup>39</sup> These	30
through dissimulation he left completely untouched and turned to the only method in which he is effective, attacking the Roman See by an	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>36</sup> Luther's words
<sup>37</sup> An appropriate comparison
<sup>38</sup> Ambrose Catharinus

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>39</sup> Luther's shameless cunning

excess of virulent railing and mad brawling, in the manner of fools who when struck by one person immediately strike another. Does he not employ a similar dissimulation when he says now that the king has not presented in his book even one passage, at least for the sake of example, by which he may convict Luther of inconsistency?	5
The pompous king, he says, <sup>40</sup> merely: spouts rhetoric in this way: "Luther: contradicts himself; who may believe him?" This simple statement was sufficient for the new defender of the church, the divinity recently born in England. But it was unnecessary for him to have shown an example, lest Luther be given the opportunity of clearing himself and of dealing with the stupid king according to his Thomistic dignity. <sup>41</sup>	10
Would not anyone who heard these words of the most shameless scoundrel, if he did not know Luther and had not read the book of the king, immediately be convinced that the king had never presented any instances of Luther's inconsistency but had deliberately concealed them so that he could more irresponsibly make statements against	15
which Luther would be denied the opportunity of defending himself? But if this same person had read the trifling work of Luther, he would admit that the king would not have erred in the least by not present- ing proof of a matter detected by everyone. Had the same person known Luther's deceitfulness, <sup>42</sup> he would not doubt that the king had done whatever	20
Luther said that the king had not done. But if this person had also read the book of the king, since he would see there so many instances of those contradictions of which Luther writes that not even one is there, how thoroughly and completely would he necessarily condemn the utterly dishonest craftiness of the most wicked scoundrel.	25
This fact will be abundantly proved by even the one passage which I shall call to your attention first, especially because of the fact that after he tries by cavilling to make light of these passages in which he says that he does not disagree with himself, he is the first to change his opinion on everything.	30
Now, since Luther had said in the <i>Babylonian Captivity</i> that everyone was commanded to receive the eucharist under both kinds, and not much later on the same page said that neither kind at all was a matter: of precept, his royal majesty in the words which follow touches on the signal madness of a man so at odds with himself.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>40</sup> Luther's words
<sup>41</sup> See the scoundrel's buffoonery
<sup>42</sup> Luther high priest of every deceit

"But please observe <sup>43</sup> how Luther wavers: and contradicts himself: in one place he: says that at the supper Christ said to each and every one of the faithful, not by way of permission but by way of command: 'All of	
you drink of this.' But afterwards, fearing to offend the laity, whom he flatters into hating the priests, he adds these words: 'Not that they who use one kind sin against Christ, since He did not command the use of any kind but left it to the choice of each individual, saying: "As often as you do these things you do them in remembrance of me." But	5
they sin who forbid both kinds to be given to persons who desire to exercise this choice. The fault is not in the laity but in the priests.' You see clearly that first he said it was commanded, then he says it: was not commanded but left to the choice of each individual. What need is there, then, for us to contradict him who so often contradicts	10
himself?" By your raving madness I ask you, "What do you have to say here, friend Luther?" Will you argue here that you are not inconsistent, <sup>44</sup> and will you be so: shameless or stupid as to defend as one and the same thing the	15
statement that both kinds were commanded to all and the statement that neither kind was commanded to anyone? But if you were so shameless as to seek this, or if anyone were so senseless as to grant what you seek, yet you could not any the better escape from the snares: of your own most deceitful trickery. When you write that the king	20
produces none of your inconsistencies by way of example, lest you be given the opportunity of clearing yourself, it is plain that what you desire is not at all the kind of example which cannot be explained away, but that kind which your opponent at any rate terms a contra- diction, in which case you would have the opportunity of clearing	25
yourself of the reproach of that fault by some trick, if you could. Behold one passage produced by the king; it was the first which occurred to me from among many as I read the book; in it you are so clearly convicted of contradicting yourself that, shameless as you are, you, who conceal by a foolish silence a passage commonly known;	30
you, wicked liar, who in the case of this passage which everyone is reading and which you yourself have read with such torment that you cannot forget it thus read, contended that this passage had never been written; you have yet not been able, by putting on a bold front, to summon up enough audacity to defend the passage as not	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>43</sup> The king's words<sup>44</sup> Luther is convicted of inconsistency

contradictory. But if you could do precisely this, although you would thus escape being considered inconsistent on the grounds of that one passage, still you would not any the more: avoid being convicted of the basest dis-	
honesty clearly fitting a real scoundrel, <sup>45</sup> since you have boasted with so much arrogance that the king had not produced even one passage, even for the sake of example, lest an opportunity be given you of clearing yourself.	5
Therefore, honest reader—to return to you after disposing of the scoundrel—this one passage suffices to convict Luther, as I said, of the most shameless dishonesty, since he says that the king has produced no example of his inconsistency lest he be given the opportunity of clearing himself. But in order that the fellow's deceitfulness may come	10
to light still more clearly, listen, reader, to yet another passage. Luther wrote in his <i>Babylon</i> that the sacrament of orders was some- thing new, and unknown to the church of Christ; that it has been recently invented by the church of the pope; and yet he admits that: this same sacrament is mentioned by Saint Dionysius, who he does not deny is	15
very ancient. <sup>46</sup> The prince did not pass over this most stupid contradiction on the fellow's part, but he censured it very sharply in the following words: <sup>47</sup> "If Dionysius were the only ancient father who wrote that orders is a:	20
sacrament, even this would be enough to overthrow Luther, who would have us think that the invention of that sacrament is something new. For its being new contradicts his ad- mission that it is included in the writings of a man he admits is ancient.":	25
See what lies this fellow will dare to tell, reader; he is not ashamed to pretend that the prince has produced no passage in which he may say that Luther contradicts himself, whereas this single passage is such: a contradiction that by producing it the prince has overthrown the rascal's whole foundation in almost three lines. I think no one is so given over to Luther as not to admit that either of these passages will	30
suffice to expose the shamelessness of the man who was not ashamed to boast with such great pomposity that the king had produced no passage, even for the sake of example, in which he might say that Luther contradicted himself. Nevertheless, so that on this point there may be a superfluity rather than the slightest lack, we will add still a	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>45</sup> This indeed Luther frequently does
<sup>46</sup> Luther is convicted of inconsistency
<sup>47</sup> The king's words

third passage. We are ready to add more than ten, except that we would be ashamed to dwell so long in this way on an evident matter.48

inactor.	
Since Luther perceived himself to be hard pressed by the perfectly clear words from the epistle of James, not only in the matter of the	5
sacrament of extreme unction, but also in that the apostle portrayed	
precisely the fellow's abusive tongue and poisonous heart, when the	
most wise prince caught this point very shrewdly and touched on it	
very skillfully, Luther began to boil with fury, and, desiring to avenge	10
himself, he first contemned the epistle, then treated the apostle as not	
worth a straw. You will read about this later, when you wish, in the	
king's book itself. But first we will touch on his remark about the	
epistle, which he contemned so much that he said it was probably not	
an apostle's because it contained nothing	15
worthy of the apostolic spirit. <sup>49</sup> I will set	
down the very words of the king on this	
matter so that you can see whether the king has brought forward no	
passage at all in which he might say that Luther contradicts him-	
self. These, then, are the words of the king. <sup>50</sup>	20
"Surely, if Luther had brought forward reasons why the epistle was	
not James', but still that of someone else	
who spoke in the same spirit, it could have	
been endured somehow. But now he says that it is probably not,	
because it is unworthy of the apostolic spirit. In which case I bring no	25
other objection against Luther than Luther himself, for hardly anyone	
contradicts Luther more often or more:	
forcefully than Luther. <sup>51</sup> He, then, in speak-:	
ing of the sacrament of orders, says that the church has the power of	
distinguishing the words of God from the words of man. How then	30
does he now say that an epistle is unworthy of the apostolic spirit	
which the church, whose judgment as he says cannot err in this	
matter, has judged to be full of the apostolic spirit? Consequently, he:	
has now so hemmed himself in on all sides by his own wisdom that he	
must either necessarily acknowledge that:	
the epistle is the apostle's, and he has said:	
that the contrary is probable; or he must:	
say that the church can be deceived in determining the sacred scrip-	
tures; this possibility he has denied." <sup>52</sup>	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>48</sup> Why, when he was not ashamed, thus to lie in an evident matter?
<sup>49</sup> Surely you do not have this doctrine from heaven, Luther!
<sup>50</sup> The king's words
<sup>51</sup> Luther is set against Luther
<sup>52</sup> Get yourself out of this, Luther

What is clearer than this passage, reader? What impudence the scoundrel has who is not ashamed to deny such clear evidence! What does he need to hear from these men who, after comparing these passages with the fellow's shameless lying, may consider the buffoon-: ish words of the most deceitful buffoon when he plays the buffoon as follows?

Seeing that he was pleased to play behind: a mask with masked words in a matter so: serious and sacred, a thing without precedent, I say,<sup>53</sup> without a mask: and openly, that this King Henry of 10: England is clearly lying and that by his: lies he resembles a most frivolous buffoon: more than a king.54 I, Luther, publicly accuse this virulent Thomist of: this crime and, with my books as well as my readers as witnesses, convict him throughout the world. In this contest, let me be done 15 with the distinction between his royal majesty and my lowly estate; I am speaking with a lying buffoon veiled by kingly titles concerning divine matters which it is the duty of every Christian to defend against: the injury of lies. If the foolish king so forgets his royal majesty that he dares to come out in public with manifest lies, and that while discuss-20 ing sacred matters, why is it not fair for me to cast his lies back into his mouth, so that, if he has derived any pleasure from lying against the divine: majesty,<sup>55</sup> he may lose it by hearing the: truth against his own majesty. 25

Please consider carefully, reader, the very just causes for which this venerable father judges it lawful for him, as if in his own right, to play the buffoon against the king. Because the: king has dared to say that Luther contra-: dicts himself,<sup>56</sup> Luther divides this statement into two charges, both very capital. The one charge is that the king made this statement without producing any passage, not even for the sake of example, lest Luther have an opportunity of defending himself. How deceitful and shameless the venerable father is in this matter: you see at least from the third passage just presented.

The other charge is that by his statement the king lies against the divine majesty. But since the king has said nothing else but what he has already proved many times; namely, that Luther is stark mad and that he constantly contradicts himself, you necessarily see, reader, 5

30:

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>53</sup> Luther's words

<sup>54</sup> Did Paul use to be so biting, Luther?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>55</sup> Or from you, you lying scoundrel

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>56</sup> It vexes Luther to be even slightly contradicted

that if the prince is lying against the majesty of God in this matter, then that majesty of God is the majesty of Luther. The king has not spoken of any other god; and so you see clearly how this reverend father is openly proclaimed to us as a god, and with his own mouth trumpets his apotheosis. In the future, therefore, we must avoid arousing this easily aroused new god of the underworld, but by casting honeyed cakes into his Cerberean mouth let us try to pacify him with pastries, and by singing a palinode in the Stesichorean manner let:	5
the king soothe him as follows: <sup>57</sup> "The: divine Luther is not contradictory, not: inconsistent, not a liar, not wicked, not virulent, not a blasphemer against God, not a raving madman, not a scoundrel, not a heretic; but he is more faithful than faith itself, <sup>58</sup> "	10
more honorable than honor itself, more: prudent than prudence itself, more reverent toward God than the saints themselves, more sincere than sincerity itself, more upright than uprightness itself, more modest than modesty itself, more constant than constancy itself, and more truthful than truth itself."	15
Sufficient proof of which is given even by the fact that he has dared to boast with such bombast that the king did not produce any contra- dictory passage of his, not even for the sake of example, lest he be given the opportunity of defending himself. Since he knows it is clearly evident to everyone that the king has produced many passages,	20
he is forced, being powerless to defend any of them, to dissemble all of them most shamelessly and to deny that they have been produced. By this most stupid denial he is refuted much more shamefully than he could ever have been refuted by any confession. Therefore, reader, as Luther for his part seeks to have you appraise the trustworthiness of	25
the king in dealing with him from the fact that the king supposedly produces no example of Luther's inconsistency, so now I beg of you in turn that you judge the utterly worthless trustworthiness of Luther from such wicked dishonesty, <sup>59</sup> such proven deceitfulness, such shameful shamelessness.:	30
I am utterly convinced that no matter what aspect of the man you examine, you will find him in every respect as you have perceived him: to be in this one respect.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>57</sup> Palinode to be sung by the king
<sup>58</sup> Ears erect now, ass
<sup>59</sup> A fair demand

He proves that Luther does not satisfactorily clear himself of the reproach of capricious inconsistency and the charge of stupid abuse. Chapter 7.	
It is worth considering how skillfully he defends those very passages in which he would have it appear that he has not been inconsistent. Since it had been objected to him that his errors concerning indul- gences and the power of the Roman pontiff had formerly not been so	5
extreme, but that later, swept along by anger and spite, he had changed his opinion for the worse, the pleasant fellow defends himself by the example of Paul and Augustine; since no one deems it a fault in them that they turned from evil to good, one would be clearly stupid not to consider it a matter of praise	10
for Luther that he has changed from:	
vicious to more vicious. <sup>60</sup> Especially since: everyone knows very well that the former, with Christ inspiring them, had charity and pious zeal toward God as their purpose, whereas no one does not know that Luther, with the devil inflating him, has taken on the most monstrous pride, the most cruel hatred,	15
the most virulent spite, and the most: pernicious counsellors possible. <sup>61</sup> Since no one becomes worst all of a sudden, this constantly inconstant fellow: has advanced with the help of these advisers, first from bad to worse, then, step by step, from worse to worst. And yet, as though he had	20
proceeded in the opposite direction and arrived at perfection, having been carried aloft to that high peak of virtue, from that height he naturally applauds himself alone; looking down on the world lying below him, he scoffs at miserable mortals, and, drunk with the new wine of such great felicity, he does not perceive from his distant	25
height how much laughter he evokes from the earth against himself: by his frenzied folly. Who would not laugh at the most wretched scoundrel blasting out such frenzied boasts, as though he reclined on the bosom of Christ, whereas he lies confined within the arse-hole of the devil? Thence he	30
farts and trumpets his splendid victories. Thence he brags that he has conquered the pope, bishops, monks, nuns, masses; <sup>62</sup> and that he has proved all these things to be nothing but sheer monstrosities,	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>60</sup> This is the way Luther imitates Paul and Augustine
<sup>61</sup> Luther's counsellors
<sup>62</sup> He reproves in short order certain impious and doltish words of Luther

idols, phantoms, lies, and the very abomination itself standing in	
the holy place; and that it is the madness of a sacrilegious people to	
want to act in the sight of God by works and not by faith alone.	
Thence this lousy friarlet boasts that he is trampling the whole	
church under his feet, and that he will be a bear on the road and a	5
lioness in the path, and an enemy so implacable that even though	
burned—for from his consciousness of heresy he has a presentiment	
that such an end threatens his life—he will double his hostile soul,	
and though his ashes are cast into a thousand seas, he will persecute	
and harass the church. In the same way,	10
doubtless, as his cronies, the other caco-	
daemons, <sup>63</sup> have done.	
Tell me, reader, who does not see, even from these words of the	
madman, that all the infernal furies, after knocking out the fellow's	
brains, have taken up residence in his empty noggin? These furies	15
drive him so mad that they do not allow him to perceive what a	10
ridiculous and wretched Thraso he makes of himself before the	
whole world. This is because from that same font of frenzy which	
pours out these railings, revilings, abusive language and blasphemies	
there also flows forth that surge of the Stygian swamp with which	20
the crazy fellow thinks that he cleanses himself from the taint of	20
abusive language by the filth of further abusive language. For	
this was the other objection brought up against him, which he tries to	
throw off as follows.	
<sup>64</sup> To the other charge, he says, with which	25:
the king beats me black and blue, namely,:	23.
that of biting language, I answer: first, that he should have proved	
my biting language is unfair and the papacy innocent. Otherwise, why	
did Christ Himself, in Matthew 23, use:	
such fiercely biting language against the:	30
scribes and pharisees and accuse them as:	50
hypocrites, blind men, fools, men full:	
of the uncleanness of hypocrisy, murderers? <sup>65</sup> And Paul, how many	
times he is vehement against what he calls mutilations, and	
against false apostles whom he calls adulterators and hucksters of the	35
word of God, dogs, deceitful workers, apostles of Satan, sons of the	55
devil, men full of deceit and malice,	
deceivers, vain babblers, bewitchers,:	
charlatans. <sup>66</sup> Will the masked Thomist accuse these persons along with	
me of spite and pride?	40
me of spice and pride:	40

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>63</sup> Luther's cronies
<sup>64</sup> Luther's words
<sup>65</sup> How skillfully he proves that he does not unfairly abuse the church
<sup>66</sup> You belong to these men, Luther

And	short	ly after.
-----	-------	-----------

But the king, as though he had demonstrated that the papacy is holy, raves with cartloads of his own virulent abuse against my biting language; a blockhead, indeed, who knew full well that in my mind the papacy is regarded as the kingdom of Antichrist.

See, dear reader, into what straits this:

fellow has cast the king: before he accused: Luther of abusive language, he should of: course have proved that the papacy is innocent; but the reverend father was not required, when he wished to blaspheme the papacy, to prove first that the papacy is wicked.<sup>67</sup> This legal shrewdness he has undoubtedly learned, by long experience, from the practice and custom of the courts. There, whoever is accused of having committed some crime is ordered to prove on the spot that he did not do it. Nor has anyone ever been so senseless as to demand proof of the deed from the person who brought the criminal to trial. But perhaps the reverend father thinks that he has carried out the role of accuser remarkably well since he has already in several brawling volumes doused the bishops of the Roman See with a flood of reproaches and revilings. Unless the king will in turn show that these bishops have all been utterly sinless, he would be unjust toward the reverend father not to allow him, free of the charge of abusive language, to abuse, not several wicked popes, but the papacy itself .:

This drunken pettifogger is so fair and experienced an accuser that because he has accused several popes, he asks the judges to please condemn for his sake, not those popes whom he has accused, but the papacy itself. This is as though a man who should prove that some consuls are wicked would reproach the consulship as such; or because of some dishonest senators would demand that every senate should be driven out of every single city; or, finally, as if someone should, because of several friarlets like Luther, condemn in their entirety all orders of friars.

Luther, however shameless, cannot deny that there have been some good and holy Roman pontiffs, nor is he such a great prophet that he can predict with certainty that there will never be any good pontiffs, since he can bring no objection at all either against the holy election or the blameless life of the present pope; and yet because of several popes whom he chooses to call wicked he condemns the papacy itself. 5

10

15

20

25

30

<sup>67</sup> Note the justice of Luther's demands

This is the way, then, in which the reverend father, Friar Martin Luther, argues with us: Some popes have been wicked; therefore, the papacy is wicked. What if someone in turn should thus argue from your example: Some Augustinian friars are heretical, seditious, schismatic; therefore, the whole Augustinian brotherhood is heretical, seditious, schismatic. Then let him subsume thus: But reverend friar, father, toper Luther is an Augustinian friar, and a counterfeit of that brotherhood; therefore, friar, father, toper Luther is a schismatic and seditious heretic. How could your paternity escape from this conclusion, which is valid according to the rule of your paternity? Surely you have but one escape: that before we make this argument, your paternity escape from the order.

Such subtle subtleties, however, the dimwitted Thomistic king naturally does not understand; but the diabolically clever Luther easily considers that since Christ and Paul so vehemently accused, the one the scribes and pharisees, the other the false apostles, over whom they had power, surely therefore it is permitted to him, a lousy friarlet,: to inveigh as intemperately as he pleases against kings, princes, pontiffs, and, under the pretext of attacking those whom he pleases to: call false apostles, against the true apostleship, according to the frenzied fancy of his mind. Nor do Christ's words, which should have restrained his frenzied insolence, make any impression on him-the words in which Christ orders the people to obey the scribes and pharisees, however evil, because of the chair of Moses, and not to scorn the holy chair because of its unworthy occupants. Indeed, even Paul himself, although when unjustly struck by the high priest he answered, "May God strike you down, you whitewashed wall," yet on being warned that it was the high priest, alleged as his excuse that he had retorted with abusive speech to an abusive deed. And this scoundrel boasts that he is equal to the apostles of Christ, and almost to Christ Himself, when because of a few men's faults noised about by the crowd he rages madly against the holy office and responds to the truly paternal charity of the Roman pontiff with frenzied railing and reviling. You see, then, honest reader, how honorably Luther has conducted

himself in this matter; he has thrown off from himself the reproach of abusive language and of inconsistency in such a way that he has not only retained those two reproaches for himself but has added also those of shameless folly and madness. From these reproaches he will 83

5

10

15

20

25

30

never be able so to clear himself that they will not brand with lasting infamy the glorious name of Luther and cling to the ashes of his body when it has been burned, as he himself prophesies, even though these ashes be scattered into a thousand seas.	
He refutes Luther's general response, in which the latter argues that nothing is to be believed with certainty which cannot be proved by clear scripture. Chapter 8.	5
Having driven off these charges from himself as the northeast wind drives off clouds from itself, he finally says: "Let us now come to the point at issue." That is, after he had by his own admission wasted on irrelevancies seven out of twenty-eight pages, <sup>68</sup> or one fourth of so slight a work on	10
such an important topic, he finally begins to lay the foundation, which: he would have us consider the general response to all the arguments contained in the king's book against him.: But here, reader, note the fruitlessly cunning counsel of a man with a bad conscience about his own case—a counsel that both betrays his	15
uneasiness and tries to assist it with worthless craft. He has heard that night is for weak forces, and so, when about to fight, he immediately escapes into darkness. He devises a response in which he leaves out all the objections that deserve a response, <sup>69</sup> as: though he were going to respond to them:	20
individually in that section of the work in which he pretends to respond: to particular objections. And yet, when you come to that section, you will find hardly any word quoted faithfully; all the strongest arguments, indeed, are passed over with shocking dissimulation.: But in this general response especially, not a single objection:	25
of the king is brought forward; he tries to turn the mind of the reader only toward himself, as though no one would ever detect such doltish adroitness. We shall therefore proceed by a different way, reader. We shall drag out this blind serpent, despite his resist- ance, from his disgusting and darksome hiding places into the light; <sup>70</sup> and we shall preface this response of his	30
with certain excerpts from the prince's	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>68</sup> Luther's prolixity
<sup>69</sup> Luther's sham battle
<sup>70</sup> Keep this in mind, reader

book. Then we shall subjoin the response itself, so that when you have both together under your eyes you can more easily judge, by means of this specious response which he has set forth as the perfection of all responses against those objections of the prince to which he was	
obligated to respond, how he has responded nothing at all.	5
First, on the sacrament of the eucharist. <sup>71</sup> :	
"Moreover, in the canon of the mass	
[the priests] repeat certain words as though	
spoken by Christ which are nowhere read in sacred scripture. And	
yet, there is no doubt that Christ did speak them. For many things	10
were said and done by Christ which none of the evangelists record.	
But certain details fresh in the memory of those who were present,	
having been handed on thereafter as it were from hand to hand since	
the very time of the apostles, have come down even to us. Luther does	
not doubt that Christ said at the last supper: 'As often as you do these	15
things you do them in remembrance of me.' He is so certain that these:	
are Christ's words that from them he takes his argument that no one	
is compelled to receive the sacrament, but that the practice, having:	
been left to the free choice of each individual, is circumscribed only by	20
the condition that as often as we do it we	20
should do it in memory of Christ. <sup>72</sup> He does	
not, therefore, read these words in the	
evangelists' accounts of the supper of the Lord. There we read nothing	
more than: 'Do this in remembrance of me.' Where then does he read	25
the words, 'As often as you do these things,' if not in the mass? I	25
certainly think not elsewhere. In the apostle's account the words are:	
different. Therefore, since he trusts those words so much and uses	
them because he finds them in the canon, why does he not with equal	
trust accept the words of the same canon in which the mass is called	20
an oblation and a sacrifice?"	30
And elsewhere concerning the sacrament of confirmation:	
"But since Luther himself mentions certain passages out of which:	
the sacrament of confirmation could not unreasonably take its	
origin (although he jeers at this), why does he, because he does not read in those passages any word of promise, so perversely judge the	35
whole church as if she were rashly accepting a sacrament? As if Christ	55
promised, said, did nothing at all which the evangelists do not	
include. According to this reasoning, if only the gospel of John were	
extant, Luther would deny the institution of the sacrament of the	
estance is such a city the institution of the saciament of the	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>71</sup> The king's words<sup>72</sup> Luther relies solely on a procedure which he condemns

Lord's supper, about which institution John writes nothing at all; he omitted to mention this by the same design of God by which all the evangelists passed over many other things which Jesus did, which, as the evangelist says, are not written in this book and which the whole	-
world could not contain. Of these events, some have been disclosed to the faithful through the mouths of the apostles, and have been preserved thereafter by the abiding faith of the catholic church. Why should you not believe her regarding some truths although they are not read in the gospels, since, as Augustine	5
says, you could not know which are the	10
gospels except by the tradition of the	10
church <sup>73</sup> If none of the gospels had ever been written, there would still remain written in the hearts of the faithful the gospel which is more ancient than the books of all the evangelists; there would remain the	
sacraments which themselves are undoubtedly more ancient than all	15
the books of the evangelists, so that Luther may not think it an	10
effectual proof of the erroneous affirmation of a sacrament that he	
does not discover its institution in the gospels.:	
"Otherwise, if he admits nothing at all but what he reads in the	
gospel so clearly that there is no room for evasion, how is it that he	20
believes—if only he does believe it, since he believes scarcely anything—	
the perpetual virginity of Mary? He will find nothing on this point	
in the scriptures; so true is this that Helvidius seized the occasion of	
decreeing the contrary from no other source than the words of the	
scriptures. Nor is any other proof opposed to him than the faith of	25
the whole church, which is nowhere greater or stronger than in the	
sacraments. I certainly think that no one who has the slightest spark of	
faith can be persuaded that Christ, who prayed for Peter that his faith	
would not fail, who established His church upon a firm rock, would	
allow her to be universally bound for so	30
many ages by the empty signs of corporal	
things through an erroneous trust in them as though they were divine	
sacraments.74 If nothing were read about them anywhere, nevertheless	
those men who associated with the Lord personally could have	
verbally conveyed His intention; of these men He said: You are the	35
witnesses who have been with me from the beginning.' The Paraclete	
Himself could have taught what was to be done; of Him Christ said:	
But when the Paraclete shall have come, whom I shall send you, the	
spirit of truth who proceeds from the Father, He will bear witness	

\_\_\_\_

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>73</sup> Which of you triumphs here, Luther?<sup>74</sup> Argument from probability

concerning me.' And again: 'When He shall have come, who is the	
spirit of truth, He will lead you into all truth. For He will not speak of	
Himself, but whatever things He shall hear, He shall speak, and the	
things which are to come He will reveal to you.' Since the church,	
then, has had so many and such great teachers, so many living	5
evangelists, and that Spirit who inspires truth, shall we believe that	
she has rashly instituted a sacrament and placed her hope in a	
meaningless sign? Shall we not rather believe that she has learned	
from the apostles; shall we not rather believe that she has learned	
from the Holy Spirit?"	10
And shortly after, concerning the sacrament of matrimony:	
"He denies that grace was anywhere promised. He denies that the	
sacrament was anywhere instituted as a sign of grace. How does he	
know this? 'Because,' he says, 'we do not.	
read of it.'75 O bold reason, and mother of	15
many heresies. From this font Helvidius drew his venom. You admit	
no sacrament unless you read of its institution in a book? What book:	
did He ever write who instituted all the sacraments? 'Concerning	
some things,' you say, 'I believe Christ's evangelists.' Why then do	
you not, concerning some things, believe Christ's church? Christ	20
placed her over all the evangelists, who were only certain members of	
the church. Therefore, if you trust an in-:	
dividual member, why do you not trust:	
the members taken as a whole? <sup>76</sup> If you grant so much to a member,	
why do you grant nothing to the whole body? The church believes	25
this is a sacrament; the church believes that, instituted by God,	
passed on by Christ, passed on by the apostles, passed on by the holy	
fathers, passed on thereafter from hand to hand as a sacrament, it has	
reached us, to be passed on by us to later generations as a sacrament,	
to be venerated until the end of the world as a sacrament. This the	30
church believes, and what she believes she declares. The same church	
tells you this, I say, as tells you that the evangelists wrote the gospels.:	
If the church did not say that the gospel of John is John's, you would	
not know that it is John's. For you were not sitting by him as he wrote:	
it. Why, then, do you not believe the church when she affirms that	35
Christ has done these things, that He has instituted these sacraments,	
that the apostles have passed them on, just as you believe her when:	
she says that the evangelist wrote this gospel?"	
You have heard, reader, several passages from among many which	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>75</sup> Luther's strongest argument<sup>76</sup> Such is the Lutheran dialectic

the king has written, in which he points out that many things were said and done and taught by Christ which are not recorded by any of: the evangelists, which are not contained in any writings of the apostles,: not related in any scriptural text. Since his associates held these details fresh in their memory, however, they have been passed on	5
successively, as though from hand to hand, since the time of the apostles and have come all the way down to us. He also shows that the catholic church, in its sacraments and articles of faith, is taught and governed by the Holy Spirit. Moreover, he proves these statements,:	J
not only from the argument that otherwise the most absurd results would follow, but from the clear words of the evangelists, as well as the evident testimony of sacred writings, in addition to that of Christ Himself. And what do you think Luther replies to these proofs? Set aside for a while, reader, the railing, the jeers, the mockery and the	10
abuse; you will find nothing else but these	15
two propositions: that nothing is true and certain apart from evident scriptures; that all other traditions are the work of men and are left to the free choice of each individual. <sup>77</sup> But in the meantime, to the reasons which the king presents; to the	
authority of the evangelists and of Christ Himself by which the king proves that other things were done, taught, and commanded besides those which were set down in writing; to these arguments which certainly should have received some answer, Luther answers nothing at all. Therefore, when he answers in such a way as to leave un-	20
touched the arguments which he should have answered, what else is he doing but admitting clearly that he has nothing to say? Although this fact is clear in itself, still, that it may become yet clearer, we will review the words of Luther and disperse the clouds and fogs in which this fogbrain shrouds himself.	25
Let us come now, he says, <sup>78</sup> to the point at: issue, and in the manner of Aristotle, who: is the god of the Thomists, let us first generally, then specifically, dispute about these points. The foremost, general and sole strength of the Henrician wisdom in so regal a book is not any scriptural author-	30
ity, not any compelling reason, but that: Thomistic mode of disputing: <sup>79</sup> "It seems: thus to me; I think thus; I believe thus.":	35

If I may recall here my friend Amsdorf,: the doltish king carries on his disputation just as the theologians

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>77</sup> The sum of Luther's book
<sup>78</sup> Luther's words
<sup>79</sup> On the contrary, this applies more to you, since you flee all reason

at Leipzig did theirs, according to the way Amsdorf likes to recount it. There, when the respondent had denied the premise of his opponent, the opponent proved the same premise by saying: "It should be so." On the respondent's denying the premise a second time, the opponent replied a second time: "and how can it be otherwise? It should be so." Very neat, and very Thomistic; indeed, very Leipzigian and very Henrician. In the same way, although I had in my book especially attacked this Thomistic general principle and had set up the divine scriptures against the observance, usage, custom and authority of	5
men, nevertheless our lord the king in his Thomistic wisdom replies	10
nothing but:80 "It should be so; usage has	
it thus; the custom has long been thus; I:	
believe thus; the fathers have written thus; the Church has thus	
ordained, etc." But if I would write another thousand books and	15
prove through the scriptures that the usage and authority of men are of no validity in matters of faith, it will still be easy for this Thomistic	15
king to answer with a thousand books and, leaving out the scriptures	
adduced by me, to keep repeating: "It should be so; usage has it thus;	
the authority of men speaks thus," and not one other word. But if I	
would say: <sup>81</sup> "How do you prove that:	20
usage and the authority of men have:	
validity?" he answers: "It should be so;:	
it seems thus to me; I believe thus. Are:	
you, a single individual, more learned than everyone?"	
Who will not ridicule this archdolt's raving ridicule that recoils back on his own ridiculous head? He talks nonsense, saying that the	25
king alleges no other argument but: "It should be so; usage has it	
thus; the custom has long been thus; I believe thus; the fathers have	
written thus; the Church has thus ordained." Everyone knows, how-	
ever, that Luther himself knows that the king makes hardly any of	30
these statements, but that he does say: "Reason proves this; God has	
revealed this; the Holy Spirit has taught this; the evangelist says this;	
the apostle says this; Christ Himself says this." To all these arguments,	
Luther says nothing at all.	
You understand then, reader, <sup>82</sup> that these	35
stubborn blockheads seek only to have	
themselves alone believed. I demand cre-	
dence not for myself but for the manifest words of God; they demand	

credence for the hackneyed and insipid fantasies of their own brain, while contemning the words of God. I have not denied the usage or

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>80</sup> Do not lie, my good man

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>81</sup> You, a single individual, are certainly more wicked than everyone

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>82</sup> Luther's words. Parmeno will not let this pass in silence

the authority of men completely; I simply wish whatever has been written outside the holy scriptures to be free and indifferent, as I refuse to have necessary articles of faith fashioned from the words of men. I wish praiseworthy words and deeds outside the testimony of scripture	
to be tolerated, yet tolerated freely. But these lunkheads make articles of faith for us out of every word of the fathers, a thing so far from what the holy men wished to be attributed to their writings that no blas- phemy could be more offensive to them than to have their free words and deeds turned by the sluggish Thomists into necessary articles of	5
faith; that is, into lying snares for the destruction of souls.	10
Behold, reader, how clearly Luther presents what we demand and what he for his part demands. We stubborn blockheads of course demand that we alone be believed; that is, that only the Italians,	
Spaniards, English, French, and finally all men alone should be	
believed, wherever the church of Christ exists today or has ever	15
existed anywhere in the world since the death of Christ. But Luther,	
an exceedingly just man, demands nothing else of course than that the	
evident scriptures be believed, the most evident of which he every-	
where drags into doubt and openly twists into heresies; and when:	20
he finds them constricting, he dares to contemn them, as we will	20
later show clearer than day.	
Meanwhile, however, let us winnow his statement that whatever is	
written outside holy scripture is free and indifferent and that he simply	
wishes whatever praiseworthy words and deeds have occurred apart	25
from the testimony of scripture to be tolerated freely. If this statement	25
is true, Luther, why do you answer nothing to all the objections	
which the king brings up against you? We will present many of these	
objections in their proper places. Meanwhile, we have cited a few	
above. If anyone, after reading them, then reads this general response	• •
of yours and sees that you have not touched on any one of these	30
objections but have passed them over and	
concealed them by silence as though they:	
were words spoken to a deaf man, <sup>83</sup> he will:	
not be able to ignore how great a fear of being unable to make a fitting	
response and how complete a lack of a true defense lead you to pass over	35
these objections. Now since we see that you are glad to evade these pas-	
sages, we shall again and again set them before you, together with	
others like them which it pains you to see.	
As I began to say, then, if everything must be held freely and	

\_\_\_\_

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>83</sup> Luther's resources reduced to straits

nothing must be believed for certain that is not evidently included in scripture, for you assert this in several places, then what does the apostle mean when he says: "Stand firm and hold the traditions that you have learned whether by word or by letter of ours"? The apostle was commanding that what he had taught by word of mouth should be preserved equally with what he had taught in writing. Something, then, was taught, not as though it were a matter of free choice, but as a matter which bound the church beyond scripture. What do you say to this, Luther ? What do you say to the	5
following words of the evangelist: <sup>84</sup> "Many: things were done which are not written in this book"? And to prevent you from saying that such incidents were written down by other evangelists, he says that the whole world could not contain them. Why then will you acknowledge as miracles only all those incidents of	10
which many could have been unknown to us without peril to our faith, but will not acknowledge that the apostles could have omitted to mention any of the sacraments, on which the church could not be in error without the sin of superstition? You see that the king, to prevent your pretending this, has also brought up the objection that	15
the evangelist John did not record the sacrament of the eucharist. If you should argue that he did not record it because the other evangel- ists had included it, then, according to that reasoning, he would rather have omitted other details of less importance which he again relates even though these evangelists had written them. Accordingly,	20
it cannot be denied that even necessary articles of faith were among those teachings which were not written down but were transmitted without writing. Now Paul, in writing to the Corinthians: about this same sacrament, said: <sup>85</sup> "I myself:	25
have received from the Lord what I also: delivered to you." Did he not deliver this truth without writing as he received it without writing? In fact, he would have delivered nothing at all in writing, either to the Corinthians, or to the Romans, or to any other people, had he been able at the time that he wrote to speak to	30
them personally. Had this perchance happened, you would have with- drawn your faith from all those teachings which are now read in the Pauline epistles. Very many of his epistles, as of the other apostles also, are lost, and of those which are extant, some are translated in- correctly, some are translated ambiguously, the copies in the two	35

\_

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>84</sup> Now his wit droops <sup>85</sup> Luther is refuted by a clear scriptural text

languages do not agree at all points, and there is incessant controversy about their meaning. Consequently, as to your sole argument, the man who admits nothing but the evident scriptures will never lack pretext for denying what he wishes and for asserting what he pleases.

Tell me, what is the significance of Christ's words: "When the Spirit, the Paraclete, comes He will lead you into all truth"? He did not say, "He will write to you," or, "He will speak to you audibly," but, "He will lead you"; that is, He will incline you inwardly and by His inspiration direct your hearts into all truth. But tell me, whom will the Holy Spirit lead into all truth? Is it the apostles only, to whom Christ was then speaking personally? Then it was to the apostles only that He also said: "I am with you even unto the consummation of the world." Who then will doubt that it was of the church that Christ said that the Holy Spirit would lead her into all truth?

What about the men to whom He said: "Go, preach the gospel to every creature"? Were they accustomed to preach the gospel from a: written text? Did Christ command the new law to be recorded on tablets or inscribed on bronze, so that whatever was not read there would be immediately and totally rejected as worthless? Is not Luther moved at all by the words of God, mentioned also by the apostle: "I will put my laws upon their hearts and upon their minds: I will write them"? He does not say, "on stone"; He does not say, "on tablets of wood"; but whereas He wrote the old law first on stone, later on wood, yet always externally, He will write the new law inwardly by the finger of God on the book of the heart. Thus what lasted a very short time on harder material, He will cause to last forever on: the most pliant material. It has pleased God in this way to manifest: His power. The tablets made of rock were broken immediately; those: of wood lasted a long time; but what He has written on the heart will last indelibly. On the heart,<sup>86</sup> therefore, in the church

of Christ, there remains inscribed the true gospel of Christ which was written there before the books of all the evangelists. There God has inscribed His faith so indelibly that no deceptions of heretics can erase it, no matter how many scriptural texts they produce from the books of the gospel that are apparently contrary to: the true faith. From this source the faith of Christ stood firm against Helvidius, the enemy of Christ's mother. From this source it stood 101

5

10

15

20

25

30

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>86</sup> The gospel is written with the greatest certainty in the hearts of men

firm against Arius, <sup>87</sup> the enemy of Christ Him- self. From this source it stood invincible against the massed troops of heretics who stormed it with the same battering ram with which Luther is now storming it, when they denied that the public faith of the church is proved from scripture, or	5
when they said that the scriptures were contrary to the faith. But the church of Christ did not doubt that whatever the Holy Spirit inspired: in the church was undoubtedly true, whether it was contained in scripture or not. Indeed, if any apparently contradictory scriptural	J
text was alleged, the faith written in her heart taught that this text was insufficiently understood by those to whom it seemed so contra- dictory, since it was a matter of absolute certainty that Christ does not fail His church on articles of faith, nor does the truthful Spirit of God contradict Himself.	10
If you still stupidly persist, however, in arguing that nothing was done or taught apart from the scriptures, and if you are not drawn from this folly by those testimonies of the scriptures which I have re- called from the book of the king and to which you have answered nothing at all, then I wish you would at least grant that in the whole	15
of sacred scripture the Father is nowhere called "unbegotten," the Son is nowhere called "consubstantial," the Holy Spirit is nowhere very clearly read to proceed from the Father and the Son. <sup>88</sup> In fact, the heretics argued so insistently that the divinity of	20
the Holy Spirit is not sufficiently clear from the scriptures that, as Saint Gregory Nazianzen testifies, they called Him <i>theos agraptos</i> <sup>89</sup> ; that is, "the God of whom nothing is written." Will you on this account forbid that any of these truths be believed for certain, and will you constitute them as	25
free to each individual, so that at the cost of his salvation a man may deny that the Father is unbegotten, he may deny that the Son is consubstantial, he may deny that the Holy Spirit proceeds from both? What would you answer to the fact that nothing at all is found in scripture about the perpetual virginity of Mary, so that Jerome had	30
great difficulty in proving that the scriptures did not contradict this truth? Although he did prove it conclusively, nevertheless he did not prove it by means of such clear scriptural texts as to deprive his opponent of every means of disputing it. The whole article clearly depends on the faith of the church. I wish you would answer frankly	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>87</sup> Helvidius. Arius
<sup>88</sup> Untie this knot if you can, Luther
<sup>89</sup> Theos agraptos

whether you obey her in regard to this article. Although you may be impious, yet I believe that you surely do obey on this point. If you do think she must be obeyed, you are certainly admitting something besides the scriptures, and this is contrary to your fundamental principle. But if you should be so impious that you would not hesitate to cast doubt on the integrity of the Virgin Mother of God, I still do not think you will be so shameless as to deny again that the eucharist is a sacrament. <sup>90</sup>	5
It is almost the only one you have left us, yet even it is not free from the defilement of your foul fingers. I do not suppose that you will retract your assertion that there is no sacrament where sacred scripture mentions no promise of grace and no remis- sion of sins: this is the single fundamental principle which you have chosen for your work of destroying the sacraments. Come then,	10
Luther, on this point at least be consistent. It will be disgraceful for you to be beaten back by means of this fundamental principle of yours; it will be impious to deny that the eucharist is a sacrament. And yet the king has forced you, whether you wish it or not, to abandon one of these two alternatives. Recall now, you rascal, the	15
words of the prince; with them as with a burning iron he has branded on your whorish face such a mark of stupidity and impiety that you cannot conceal it with any disguise. "Now that we <sup>91</sup> have proved according to Luther's own fundamental principle that	20
the sacraments which the church believes could not have been insti- tuted except by God, even though nothing at all were read about them in scripture, let us see whether scripture really does make no mention at all of this sacrament. All men unanimously admit that the apostles were ordained priests at the Lord's supper. Luther alone	25
denies it, although it is quite evident from that passage that they were given the power of changing the bread into the Body of Christ, a thing which only a priest can effect. But it is not a sacrament, he says, because no grace was promised to them. How does Luther know this? Because we do not read it, he says. This line of reasoning is habitual	30
with Luther: It is not written in the gospel; therefore it was not done by Christ. The evangelist invalidates this form of deduction when he says: <sup>92</sup> 'Many things were done which are not written in this book.' But we will touch: Luther a little closer still. He grants that the eucharist is a sacrament.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>90</sup> He will even deny that Christ is God, if he pleases
<sup>91</sup> The king's words
<sup>92</sup> Note this, Luther

If he did not admit this he would be mad. But where does he find in scripture that grace was promised in that sacrament? He accepts nothing but the scriptures, and evident ones at that. Let him read the passage about the Lord's supper; he will not find in any of the evangelists that grace is promised in the reception of the sacrament. <sup>93</sup> The words of Christ read: "This is my blood of the new covenant, which is being shed for many	5
unto the forgiveness of sins.' By these words He signified that He would redeem the human race through His suffering on the cross. But when He said earlier: 'Do this in remembrance of me,' He did not in those words promise to the one who does it, that is, to the priest who consecrates or to the one who receives the eucharist, any grace, any remission of sins. But neither does the apostle, in the letter to the	10
Corinthians when he threatens judgment to those who eat unworthily, make any mention of grace for those who eat worthily. And if any- thing from the sixth chapter of John promises grace to him who receives the sacrament of the Lord's flesh and blood, not even that can help Luther, since he says that that whole chapter has nothing at:	15
all to do with the eucharist. You see, then, how this promise of grace which he grandly proposed to us throughout his work as the sole basis of a sacrament cannot be maintained in the case of that sacrament which is almost the only one he has left us, unless, as is necessary, he has recourse beyond the words of scripture to the faith of the	20
church."	25
Have you heard these words before, Luther? <sup>94</sup> Or have you become so drowsy from drinking that you do not hear them shouted into your ears? Why did you fall silent at them, though you	
boast that you answer so grandly? Did you have to conceal the fact that he completely destroyed the one fundamental principle by which you would seem to have destroyed all the sacraments? Since you laid down, as the one foundation for your <i>Babylon</i> , the assertion that there is no sacrament unless we read of a promise of grace in the	30
evident testimony of scripture, and since you now enlarge that foun- dation by the assertion that nothing at all must be believed for certain which is not clearly read in holy scripture, the prince forces you to the point where you must either deny the sacrament of the eucharist, which before was the only one you admitted; or, if you	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>93</sup> Nowhere do we read that this sacrament is a sign of grace to the one who receives it <sup>94</sup> Rather, his spite obstructs his hearing

choose to persist in that belief, withdraw by necessity from this in- famous foundation and flee for refuge beyond the words of holy scripture to the public faith of the church which you call papist.	
He refutes the assertion that although something may be true apart from scripture yet it cannot be certain, and there will be the danger that false teachings will pass as truths into articles of faith and that traditions of men will pass for the traditions of God. Chapter 9.	5
What does the friar, father, toper answer to these arguments? The sot is asleep; he is buried in his cups; he does not hear. When he has slept off that mouthful, will he then, rising from his drunken stupor, belch at us this objection: that although some things are true which still are not contained in any scriptures, yet they cannot be known for certain?	10
Since man is free to fashion very many traditions, he will doubtless say that we have no sign by which to distinguish the things that are true from those that are of our own fashioning. From this, he says, will follow the absurd conclusion that we will embrace all human tradi- tions as the traditions of God. If this objection is true, Luther is a cautious fellow, but the evangelist was not cautious enough, the	15
apostle was not cautious enough, for they did not see that since certain truths which the church needed to preserve were not recorded in writing, as we have shown, either those truths could eventually slip from memory, or under their guise other teachings proceeding from human falsehood could arrogate authority to themselves as though	20
they were likewise handed down by God. And yet Luther thinks him- self so strong on this point that he shouts to us a hundred times: "Nothing must be held as certain and undoubted which does not appear in the scriptures, and clear and evident scriptures at that." <sup>95</sup> Otherwise he considers it a necessary con-:	25
sequence that the church will erroneously bind herself to empty signs in place of true sacraments until she thinks that the traditions of men are the traditions of God, or, in the case of an ambiguous scriptural text, she adheres to the false as against the true interpretation. Luther considers this error to be	30
inescapable.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>95</sup> Are you fearful, my dear fellow?

At this point we could have countered either of these suggestions by quoting several of the ancient fathers or several passages from sacred scripture, except that it seemed better to set against Luther the one and only person whom he esteems more	
highly than all the fathers, whom he	5
esteems more than all the evangelists;	5
namely, Luther. <sup>96</sup> Rather than cite him directly by way of objection,	
we shall quote a passage reminding the reader of an objection already	
raised by the king, which, since Luther	
could not refute it, he deceitfully passed	10
over in silence. <sup>97</sup> This, then, is what the	
king says on the sacrament of orders.	
"But he advances <sup>98</sup> as an inescapable:	
weapon the argument that nowhere is a	
promise of grace recorded for this sacra-	15
ment. He says that the whole New Testa-	
ment makes not one mention of this sacrament. And it is ridiculous, he	
says, to allege as a sacrament of God what can nowhere be shown to	
have been instituted by God. We are not permitted, he says, to ascribe	
to divine ordinance anything which has not been divinely ordained,	20
but he says we must try to confirm everything by clear scriptural texts.	
Later we will investigate whether the New Testament makes no	
mention at all of this sacrament. Meanwhile, I shall deal with him as	
though no mention at all were made, since it is with this same	05
weapon that he hopes to spear almost all the sacraments. Against	25
this weapon I shall take up as my shield the very arms which Luther	
himself admits are impenetrable. For these are his words:99	
The church undershedly has the power	
The church undoubtedly has the power to distinguish the word of God from the	
words of men, as Saint Augustine confesses	30
in saying that he believed in the gospel	50
moved by the authority of the church which proclaimed that this	
was the gospel.	
was the gospei.	
"Since the church, then, as Luther admits, has the power to dis-	
tinguish the word of God from the words of men, it is certain that she	35
has this power from no other source but God, and for no other cause	
than that the church may not err in those matters in which errors	
should not be made. Therefore it follows from this foundation which	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>96</sup> Nothing is truer than this truth
<sup>97</sup> This is the way Luther usually conquers
<sup>98</sup> The king's words, by which he refutes Luther from Luther's own words
<sup>99</sup> Luther's words in the *Babylonian Captivity*, from which he is clearly refuted

Luther has laid for us that the church has from God not only that power which Luther grants, the distinguishing of the word of God from the words of men, but also the ability to distinguish the divine from the human meaning in the divine scriptures. For otherwise, of what use would it be for the church, with God teaching her, to distinguish the true from the false scripture, if in the true scripture she should not distinguish the false from the true meaning? Then, by the same reasoning, it also follows that even in those matters which are not written down, God teaches His church so that she cannot erroneously embrace the false for the true, since such a possibility would threaten no less danger than if she either considered the writings of men as the words of God or derived a false meaning from the true words of God. This would be the case especially if she should accept false sacraments as true and the traditions of men as the traditions of God; rather, not the traditions of men, but the fabrications of the devil, if the church of Christ should, as magicians do, place her hope in fictitious and worthless signs of bodily things as though they were the sacraments of Christ. "It is manifestly clear, then,<sup>100</sup> from Luther's admitting that the church has the power to distinguish the words of God from the words of men, that she has no less the power also to distinguish traditions of God from the traditions of men, since otherwise one or the other error could arise, either of which is equally to be avoided, and since Christ's concern is not that the church should not err in one or the other manner, but that she should not err in any manner. No error could be more offensive to Christ, however, than if the faith which the church should place in Him alone should be placed by her

113

5

10

15

20

25

30

35

which the church should place in Film alone should be placed by her signs supported by no grace at all but void and empty of all the blessing of faith. The church cannot err, therefore, in accepting the sacraments of faith; no more, I say, than she can err in accepting the scriptures, in which matter even Luther confesses that the church cannot err. If the opposite were true, many absurd consequences would follow, but above all this one, than which nothing can be more absurd, that all the teachings of the Christian faith, established throughout so many ages, would be called into doubt again at the whim of the growing number of heretics. If nothing should be held as certain except what is confirmed by the scriptures, and evident ones at that, as Luther says, not only will we not defend the perpetual

<sup>100</sup> Luther miserably run through by his own weapon

virginity of holy Mary, but also anyone who ever chooses either to bring to life new sects or to revive those that have been buried will be presented with inexhaustible material for attacking the faith. There have been very few heretics who have not accepted the scriptures, but almost all of them established their teachings on the argument either that their doctrines were confirmed by the scriptures, or, when their doctrines seemed conformable to reason, that the contrary was not defined by the scriptures, since they argued that the passages which were brought forward in opposition to their sect were being interpreted otherwise than the orthodox church was accustomed to interpret them. Moreover, to prevent these passages from being called evident, they either contrived another meaning, or they produced from another part of the same scripture passages which were apparently very contrary to the first, and thus kept confusing the whole matter so that it would appear ambiguous. Thus, if the public faith of the church had not stood firm against Arius, I do not know whether he would ever have lacked matter for disputing about the scriptures."

I have no doubt, reader, that as you read these words you experience both astonishment and abhorrence for the wicked and shameless dissimulation of this scoundrel, who like a deaf man ignores that warning which everyone realizes has penetrated his ass-ears so painfully that not even a drunken person could shake off that feeling of pain. For what weapon could have struck Luther more forcibly than that which caused him to lie wounded and transfixed by his own words? He rarely speaks the truth; yet the very thing which he does not say truly refutes the falsehoods which he has added to it. What escape will you contrive here, Luther?<sup>101</sup> With what doltish device will you labor to escape? Summon your assembly of scoundrels, topers, whore-masters, assassins; let them lead you out of this labyrinth; let them persuade you to do once more what you have so often done: revoke and recall any syllable which you have ever spoken well. Shout that you regret having admitted that the church has been given the power to distinguish the scriptures of God from the writings of men. But if you do this, and it is clear that you will eventually come round to it, you should at the same time grant that the gospel itself is uncertain and of no authority; the gospel about which you shout so loudly with your mouth, but which you do not at all believe in your heart. Should you not retract, however, but concede that the church

115

5

10

15

20

25

30

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>101</sup> Here, brotherhood of Luther, run to help your pot-brother

has been given by God the power of inerrancy in distinguishing the	
words of God from the words of men, and if you cannot assign any	
other source of this power than the partic-	
ular care with which God so governs the	
church that He does not consent to her	5
erring in matters of such great importance, <sup>102</sup> then it is necessary for you	
to concede also that God will never fail His church in interpreting the	
scriptures or in distinguishing traditions, wherever such a danger	
besets her from her lack of knowledge as would exist if she were	
permitted to err on necessary articles of faith or on the sacraments. To	10
err on these matters is nothing else than to withdraw one's faith from	
God and to place it, not in man, but in empty signs. This is almost	
worse than to worship the molten calf. In this matter Christ Himself	
testifies how far He is from failing His church when He says: "I am	
with you even unto the end of the world."	15
with you even unto the end of the world.	10
He shows that Luther stupidly boggles in trying to make the	
identity of the church a matter of dispute, and at the same	
time he answers the empty prattle of Luther's nonsense	
against Ambrose Catharinus on the question of the	
same church. Chapter 10.	20
same endren. Enapter 10.	20
Impudent as he is, however, he will perhaps at this point raise a	
question about the church, as he often does, and will say that the	
whole church which he calls papist is not the church of Christ. In	
order not to neglect any argument, the prince very shrewdly attacks	
the rascal on this matter accurately and keenly. In speaking of the	25
sacrament of orders, after recalling Luther's words from the <i>Baby</i> -	25
<i>lonian Captivity</i> , "This sacrament of orders <sup>103</sup>	
is unknown to the church of Christ, and it	
was invented by the church of the pope," the prince adds: <sup>104</sup>	
"These few words contain a great heap	30
of falsehood and nonsense. He distinguishes	50
the church of the pope from the church of Christ, whereas the	
pope is head of the same church of which Christ is. He says that the church has invented what she did not	
	35
invent but received as instituted. <sup>105</sup> He says	55

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>102</sup> What do you have to snarl here, Luther?
<sup>103</sup> Luther's words
<sup>104</sup> The king's words
<sup>105</sup> Luther is convicted of lying

this sacrament is unknown to the church of Christ, whereas it is certain that almost every region of the earth which truly professes the faith of Christ also considers orders as a sacrament. If he could find some obscure corner, and I do not think he can, in which the sacrament of orders is unknown, nevertheless that corner should not be compared with the rest of the church, which is subject not only to Christ but also for the sake of Christ to the sole vicar of Christ, the Roman pope, and which believes that orders is a sacrament.	5
"Otherwise, if Luther persists in distinguishing the church of the pope from the church of Christ and says that in the one church orders is considered a sacrament but is not considered such in the other, let him bring forward that church of Christ which, contrary to the faith of the papal	10
church, as he calls it, is ignorant of the sacrament of orders. <sup>106</sup> Mean- while, when he says that this sacrament is unknown to the church of Christ and that those whom the pope governs do not belong to the church of Christ, it is certainly clear that according to both these reasons he separates from the church of Christ not only Rome, but all	15
Italy, Germany, Spain, France, Britain, and all the rest of the nations that obey the Roman pontiff or receive orders as a sacrament. When he takes all these peoples away from the church of Christ, it neces- sarily follows either that he say the church of Christ is nowhere, or that, like the Donatists, he reduce the catholic church of Christ to	20
two or three heretics buzzing in a corner about Christ." You see, reader, that the king has reduced the matter to this point: if the church which Luther calls papist is not the church of Christ, it necessarily follows either that the church of Christ is nowhere or that it is only in whatever place there are two or three heretics buzzing in	25
a corner about Christ. What does Luther answer to this? He is silent; sufficient praise. He thus acknowledges that he understands the words of Christ, who says: "Wherever two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I also in the midst of them." He does not remember that whoever are	30
separated from the church, even if they are gathered together and speak about Christ, are the council of the devil. <sup>107</sup> There is one church of Christ, outside of which there is no church except that of the wicked. And yet it does not surprise me at all that Luther answered nothing	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>106</sup> Perhaps he has seen it in Utopia<sup>107</sup> Such are the Lutherans

to these words of the king. This is the man's constant practice: to hammer away at his own ideas incessantly but at the same time always to pass over every objection raised by his opponent. He did the same thing in replying to Ambrose Catharinus on this very question. The fellow who was a Theseus to Luther in dredging up the witless witticisms in that book may deride Catharinus as much as he pleases, yet he also undoubtedly sees that Catharinus has more native ability and learning in his finger than Luther has in his brain. When	5
Catharinus answered him on the power of the pope and of the church, Luther answered nothing at all to Cathar- inus' objections. <sup>108</sup> Anyone who reads these objections fairly and without bias and	10
compares them with Luther's writings will declare that Luther is a flagrant trifler who, ignoring everything his opponent says, answers only, "I deny everything that you say. I want no distinctions. I believe nothing apart from the scriptures. As for the meaning of the scriptures, I do not believe the holy fathers, for they have all erred. I want no charge of inconsistency. The charge of inconsistency does not	15
solve the argument." And a thousand like trifles. Catharinus, as is necessary, distinguishes the Church militant from the Church triumphant, saying that in the former the evil live mingled with the good, in the latter live saints only. But Luther wants no distinctions, being unwilling to distinguish, as I see it, between the election of which Christ said, "Many are called but few are chosen,"	20
and that election of which Christ said, "Have I not chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?" So that he will not have to admit that he is clearly talking nonsense, he demands that distinctions be proved from scripture, as though he would then finally believe. Yet he ridicules no less the distinction between faith formed by charity and unformed faith.	25 30
You <sup>109</sup> have fashioned the most wicked fic- tion of all, that of unformed faith, so that you may more easily and more safely, like the robbers of Moab, introduce your sacrileges into the scriptures of God. But Paul says to us: "What fellowship has light with darkness? What harmony is there between Christ and Belial?"	35
between Unrist and Belial?"	

You see how, as though by Paul's authority, he declares this distinction to be not only contrived but even most wickedly contrived.

 $<sup>^{108}</sup>$  That Luther answers nothing to Catharinus' objections  $^{109}$  Luther's words

Yet at the same time the scoundrel con- ceals the fact that he is accusing the apostle himself of wickedness. What is more	
frequently on the lips of Paul than this distinction? <sup>110</sup> In many pas- sages he insists on the great difference which exists between that faith which lacks charity and the life of good works and that which works	5
through charity. But it is enough for Luther to shout one thing and to conceal the other by silence.	
Now Catharinus occasionally brought up certain points which,	
being divinely taught to the church, all the holy fathers write and the	10
whole Christian world believes. To this Luther cries out: "I accept	
nothing but evident scriptures." Yet all the	
faithful steadfastly deny that Christ took	
care to have everything written down	
which He wishes Christians to believe; nor	15
has Luther proved this till now by any word	
of scripture. <sup>111</sup>	
When the point under discussion was the interpretation of some	
scriptural text, Catharinus alleged in behalf of the interpretation which	20
he himself affirmed the constant agreement of the most holy fathers, of the most ancient interpreters, of the most learned men. To this	20
Luther shouts: "I have no use for the holy fathers; I have no use for	
ancient interpreters; I have no use for those learned doctors; all, being	
men, have erred." Meanwhile, he introduces no argument on his own	
behalf except to shout that whatever he says is true, and that he neither	25
errs nor can err inasmuch as he is not a man as the holy fathers were,	
but is outside the human condition, an infallible ass.	
Catharinus proved that many absurd and inconsistent conclusions	
flowed from Luther's position. To this	
Luther shouts: "The charge of inconsist-	30
ency does not solve the argument," <sup>112</sup>	
although deduction to an inconsistency is the strongest method both	
of proof and of rebuttal. Luther is not impressed even if someone	
should prove that from his teaching it follows that man is an ass.	
Whoever should prove this to Luther would accomplish no more than	35
if someone should prove the same point to an ass.	
Catharinus said that in the words of Matthew 16, "To you I will	
give the keys of the kingdom of heaven," the keys were promised, not	

give the keys of the kingdom of heaven, the keys were promised, not given, but that from this text it is necessarily proved that the keys were

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>110</sup> Here Luther is refuted by evident scripture
<sup>111</sup> Not everything can be proved by the scriptures since many things are not recorded in the scriptures

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>112</sup> How foolishly Luther answers the words of Catharinus

given because there is no doubt that Christ, being truthful, has ful- filled His promise. To this Luther answers that even if Christ made the promise, one did not have to believe that He kept His promises unless one should read in scripture that He did fulfill them.	
It is necessary <sup>113</sup> that the place, the person and the time of the fulfillment of the prom- ise be confirmed for us not by our conjecture but by the testimony of scripture. For if this presentation of the keys cannot be shown in accipture we will be upgertain even to this day as to the time when	5
scripture, we will be uncertain even to this day as to the time when Peter received them. Far be it from Christ, however, to leave us so uncertain that we would not know the time, the place in which Peter received the keys. <sup>114</sup>	10
O great danger, if we should not know the time, the place in which Peter received the keys! Not to know this will surely be little less dangerous than not to know the day and the place where Peter was baptized.	15
Furthermore, since Luther occasionally twisted some text of scripture to his own advantage, <sup>115</sup> Catharinus, in refuting his false interpretation, first proved the truer meaning from the agreement of ancient interpreters, then recounted multiple other meanings also, showing that any one of them was more probable than that which Luther	20
argues is the only true and evident meaning. But Luther escapes this argument as follows:	25
I do not allow you <sup>116</sup> to attribute more than one meaning to scripture. I do not con- sider valid the argument that you try so often: "It can also be stated thus; it can also be understood thus; it can also be answered thus; literally it can mean this; mystically it can mean this." Away with this "It can," my dear Catharinus; all these are arguments of false- hood and mere evasions and clear defenses of my interpretation.	30
But of course, Luther. Why not? So that if someone should show that you present as the indubitably true meaning one which is the least probable of many, you in turn may boast the more and wish to be thought so much the wiser, the more ways you are shown to be a dolt.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>113</sup> Luther's words
<sup>114</sup> Luther's remarkable scruple
<sup>115</sup> How unfair Luther is in his zeal for his own side

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>116</sup> Luther's words

Say this, "This text is to be understood thus and in no other way," so that you <sup>117</sup> may allege one constant and simple meaning of scripture even as I do; for this is the office of a theologian as the other is the office of a sophist.	
Certainly, Luther. Although I grant that the literal sense, if it should ever be evident, is almost always the only one effective for proving anything; still, it often happens that a matter is expressed too obscurely for that single meaning to flash out from the ambiguous words, all the most learned men and the holiest of	5
ancient theologians have usually ascertained various meanings, leaving the matter open for careful consideration. Doubtless they judged this was a safe procedure and the office, not of a sophist as you say, but of a sober theologian truly worthy of God. <sup>118</sup> But	10
this that you declare is the sole office of a theologian, those ancient and true theologians judged to be the role of a true and unadorned blockhead, and the rashness of a conceited scoundrel, who argues that an interpretation of scripture which is doubtful and disputed by learned men, or one contrived solely from	15
his own understanding, is the only genuine interpretation. The wise man warns and reproaches this class of fools when he says: "Lean not upon thy own prudence, and do not wish to seem wise in your own eyes." But Luther, in his own eyes the only wise man, cries out:	20
I do not want you, <sup>119</sup> Catharinus, to invoke long-standing usage and the multitude of those who agree with you. The word of Christ urges me in this matter; He alone must be believed before all the saints, even before the angels.	25
Without a doubt, Luther, Christ alone must be believed more than all the saints and all the angels. But since God speaks in His saints, according to the text: "It is not you who are speaking, but the Holy Spirit who speaks in you," since so many saints, so many learned men agree that the words of Christ were not spoken with that intention	30
which you alone argue against so many saints, such learned men, then he who agrees with you does not, as you boast, agree with Christ, but contrary to the truth which God has inspired in so many of His saints, he agrees with the devil, the father of lies, who tries through you to	35

he agrees with the devil, the father of lies, who tries through you to pervert the truth. When, according to your habit, you distort the

 $<sup>^{117}</sup>$  Luther's words  $^{118}$  What Luther calls the office of a sophist is above all that of a theologian

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>119</sup> Luther's words

scripture, saying, "Of which of the angels has He ever said, 'Hear this man'?" as though according to that text you ought to believe nothing	
that anyone else says, why do you not also remember the words which	
Christ Himself says to the apostles, and through them to other un-	
doubtedly holy men on whom He deigned to pour out His Spirit: "He	5
who hears you hears me"? It is abundantly evident that Christ breath-	5
ed out His Spirit on the holy doctors of the church, whose teaching and	
life He has confirmed by many miracles. Therefore, even if not a single	
one, being human, has not at some time been in error, a thing which	
you also proclaim happened to the apostles themselves, nevertheless,	10
when they have agreed on a point in such great numbers through so	
many ages, it must not be doubted that they reached this agreement	
by the inspiration of the divine Spirit who makes those who dwell in a	
house to be of one mind, and that when you despise their agreement	
and frequently blaspheme them, saying, "I do not care about a	15
hundred Jeromes, I do not care about a thousand Cyprians, Augus-	
tines, Ambroses," you are exposing yourself to the threats of Christ,	
who said: "He who despises you despises me."	
Because Catharinus agreed with him that it was indeed true that	
Christ is the true and solid rock and the true head of the church, but	20
in such a way that Peter also is both rock and head of the church	
under Christ, Luther is exceedingly self-complacent and thinks that	
he plays the buffoon very wittily.	
This blockhead <sup>120</sup> does not perceive that if	
my argument is granted as true accord-	25
ing to any one interpretation, especially the spiritual one, which	
Catharinus does grant me, then clearly I have conquered even by the	
decision of my opponent.	
Then the merry fellow continues to play the witty buffoon, pro-	
claiming that he must philosophize dully before a dull and blear-eyed	30
blockhead since an ass does not respond to a lyre; and so Luther,	
laying aside his lyre, plays liltingly with letters at Catharinus' expense,	
and teaches him as he would a boy by means of the alphabet, as if he	
were about to prove the matter by a geometric demonstration. He	
writes as follows:	35
But if A should argue with B, <sup>121</sup> and the	
matter should proceed to the point where	
A would grant that B had spoken very well and according to the	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>120</sup> Luther's words<sup>121</sup> Luther's words

spiritual meaning, but that he himself follows another outward mean- ing, and if, with this granted, A should nevertheless boast that he has conquered and confuted B, and should then celebrate the triumph entirely by railing, what will the spectator judge at this point? Will he		131
not think that the Bacchae or the Corybantes are raging?	5	
Ha! Ha! He! Clever, neat, smart, Luther, incomparable! Cathar- inus is clearly done for. Everyone who hears this will die laughing. Now at last everyone is afraid of you. But please, Luther, in your kind		
indulgence allow us dullards to examine still more dully this demon-		
stration of yours which you yourself admit is dull.	10	
Suppose, then, that A and B are disputing among themselves, and A should say that Moses led the children of Israel out of Egypt, while B should utterly deny this. Then this B would say that God was the	-	
leader, and A would grant him that and admit that B speaks very	15	
well and very truly on this point, especially according to the spiritual	15	
meaning, and yet that what A himself says is no less true; namely,		
that Moses was the leader of the children of Israel. Now suppose that		
B, because A grants that what he says is true, especially according to		
the spiritual meaning, should boast that he has thereby conquered	20	
and should celebrate the triumph entirely by railing, what would the spectators judge at this point, Luther? Would they not judge that B	20	
is truly a beast? Would they not judge that this truly dull and blear-		
eyed blockhead was fit to be cudgelled?		
Now what is the nature of your words, "especially according to the		
spiritual meaning"? Recently you were saying that not the spiritual	25	
and mystical but only the literal meaning proves anything. But now	23	
suddenly, since Catharinus granted that it is true spiritually that		
Christ is the rock, but that in that passage of Matthew Christ was		
nevertheless not speaking about His own preeminence but about		
placing a vicar in charge of His flock, you immediately take a fancy to	30	
that spiritual meaning and prefer it to the literal for proving your	50	
point. From his granting that you speak the truth in some sense,		
especially in the spiritual sense, you conclude that he speaks falsely		
when by means of the decisions of the holy fathers he resists your		
distortion of the letter. Even if it is true, as it is, that Christ is most	35	
truly and firmly the rock, most truly the head of the church and most	00	
truly the foundation corner stone of the church who has made both		
one, nevertheless, in that passage Christ was not speaking about His		
own sovereignty but about substituting the primacy in His church.		
0 · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·		

Not only do the saints testify and the Christian world agree to this, but even the sequence of the line itself seems to demonstrate it clearly; nor does the sense which you assign seem to fit very exactly. It is as though Christ were saying, "You are Peter, and therefore I shall build my	
Church upon myself."	5
"But," you say, "there is only one meaning. Therefore, if my	5
meaning is true, that of Catharinus is false." You yourself do not deny	
that at times there is one sense that is mystical, another that is literal.	
You say that the second alone is effective as proof. This mystical sense,	
therefore, agreed on by almost all exegetes, Catharinus alleges for	10
himself and grants to you as being not at all prejudicial to the literal	
sense. But at this point you start gibbering again and keep shouting:	
Catharinus, <sup>122</sup> you do not deny that my	
argument is in some sense true; therefore	
yours is false. For if anything that I say is true, then everything that	15
you say is false. You must either deny my arguments utterly and	10
completely or you must grant that your own are utterly worthless.	
r i j i j i i i i j i i i i i j i i i i	
What a fair condition you offer, Luther! Did not Sinon in Virgil	
also say something true? And yet he cost the Trojans dear; allured by	
what was true they believed the lies that were patched on to it. Does	20
one not refute you on any point unless he overthrows all your argu-	
ments completely and wholly? Therefore, if you mingle your utterly	
false teachings with the apostles' creed, either one must deny whatever	
truth the apostles say or he must grant along with it whatever lies you	
tell. Oh, the shrewdness of Luther!	25
But that is clearly an inescapable weapon and a charmed sword	
with which you transfix Catharinus in saying that even if Peter should	
have been authorized as primate of the church, nevertheless the pope	
could not be primate nor could he succeed Peter in office unless he	20
succeeds Peter in conduct. Here you have the mastery, you laugh, you	30
exult, you jeer, and ignoring all the holy men who have governed the	
holy see you swoop down like a raven and a vulture to feed only on	
decay; except that you usually gnaw like a rabid dog on all the most	
holy men and with your rotting teeth turn honey itself and an anti-	2 5
dote into your own poison. But at the same time you maintain a	35
profound silence about all the answers which Catharinus had previ- ously given you on these arguments. He proved to you most clearly	
that the case of a man and his office, of conduct and authority, of	
that the case of a man and ms office, of conduct and autionty, of	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>122</sup> Luther's words

virtue and power is so distinct that, even though the heavenly life which God has promised to virtue is taken away from wicked and criminal men, nevertheless the earthly authority which God has joined to their office is not taken away. And so, Luther, if you wish to be thought a man, you should first leave off and answer these arguments of Catharinus. When you have answered him, not like an ape with gesticulation and nonsense, but with sound reason as becomes a man, then finally, at the Greek kalends, you may return and laugh.

Meanwhile, this laughter of yours is insane and madder than the laughter of Ajax; with it you pass over in silence and dissimulate the reasonings of your opponent and, as though you heard nothing, answer nothing, but only trifle and jeer like a senseless madman and consider yourself wonderfully witty when you jest and trifle and play the buffoon on the problem that if Peter, who was holy and virtuous, could be called a rock, anyone would be so foolish as to think that the name "rock" could fit a pope who does not reflect the virtues of Peter. What an intricate knot, and how difficult to untie it! Because of the steadfastness of Peter's faith. Christ made him the head and primate of His church, as a rock standing in His own place, not as though Peter were immortal and so could hold office forever, but many would successively follow him into that office, and these not all of equal merit. Since this is so, even if the name "rock" does not fit them, is the power of the office for that reason not the same? What if Christ had said: "Peter, because of your eminent virtues, I constitute you, a good and holy man, as the initial head of my church, so that you may be an example for the kind of men I wish to be appointed as your successors." Certainly, if his successor were the kind of man to whom one could apply neither the name of good nor that of holy, the same authority would nevertheless reside in the office. Unless no one was a priest in Israel after Moses and Aaron except one who equalled either of those men in sanctity; or unless no one would be a bishop who was not altogether the kind of man the apostle describes. Paul himself certainly submitted even to a wicked bishop; and of Caiphas the evangelist writes that even though he was unholy and ignorant; the spirit of prophecy was given him because of the office of the episcopacy. In fact, although Christ Himself calls the scribes and pharisees impious and wicked men who place heavy burdens on the shoulders of others which they themselves do not wish to touch with a finger, while at the same time living proudly and wickedly, nevertheless

10

5

15

20

25

30

35

Christ, as I have said, commanded the people to obey them on account of their office. How forceful also is the point which to you seems absurd: that the word "rock," which usually signified a virtuous man, would sometimes apply to a	
man who is not virtuous. <sup>123</sup> I wish that you	5
had a mind that would be balanced at	-
least long enough for you to be able to weigh carefully the point which	
you ridiculously deride. Tell me, Luther, do you think that the name	
"rock" is holier than the name "Christ"? But the word "Christ" is	
applied even to an evil and wicked man; unless Luther considers	10
David ridiculous for saying of Saul: "I have sinned in touching the	10
Christ of the Lord."	
I am surprised at you, Luther, that you wish to appear the only	
one who has read the scriptures, and that you wish it to seem so	
novel if any figurative word occasionally applies to opposite things. I	15
ask you whether or not giants are described in sacred scripture as	10
proud and violent, and yet Christ Himself is called a giant? What	
about the serpent which so often in scripture indicates the devil? Did	
not the same animal when raised up in the desert represent Christ,	
even though, as I am aware, one of a most learned and holy group of	20
theologians thinks that the serpent there also represents the devil,	
because when raised onto the cross of Christ, fixed there and dead, it	
lost its poison and power to harm? But to me it is a stronger argument	
that Christ applied this figure to Himself	
when He said: <sup>124</sup> "As Moses lifted up the ser-	25
pent in the desert, even so must the Son of	
Man be lifted up." Now I think that there is no doubt that the word	
"lion" is applied more than once in scripture to the devil, and yet it is	
said nonetheless of Christ: "The lion of the tribe of Juda has over-	
come." Are not the words "elect" and "apostle" holy names, and yet	30
both of them were applied to your brother, Judas, even at the time	
when the name "devil" fitted him. Thus, you see how subtle you are	
when you argue that it is absurd to call anything a rock unless it is	
holy, although you see a man who is not holy called "Christ," and a	
man who is a devil called an "apostle," and the selfsame word applied	35
to both God and the devil, and the representation of the same animal	
designating both the Savior and Satan. Go on now, Luther, and glory	
with your followers that you answer Ambrose Catharinus coura-	
geously and cleverly on the primacy of the pope.	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>123</sup> What is more ridiculous than this opinion?<sup>124</sup> Did even Christ himself err here, Luther?

I had not intended, reader, to say anything at all in this passage on		139
the power of the pope, nor was I so much drawn to this by the urge to		
teach how Luther is ever the same, as forcibly dragged here against		
my will by the fellow's confusing discussion in which he has so en-		
tangled the question of the church with the question of the pope that	5	
I could not answer him on the one without touching somewhat on		
both. But since he most insistently demands that the question of the		
identity of the church on earth be discussed, it was not my intention to		
leave untouched any of those arguments on the question which I had		
noticed that Luther, not without the help of a Theseus, had handled	10	
so subtly that in no other passage does he boast more frequently or		
more shamelessly. This also is his constant practice, always to triumph		
most boastfully in word when he sees himself most disgracefully over-		
come in actual fact.		
When I was about to discuss the church, therefore, I would gladly	15	
have refrained not only from the question of the pope but also from		
any other teaching of Luther's, so far as the present subject would		
permit, in which I have undertaken to refute nothing but the trifling		
remarks with which the scoundrel stuffed the book in which he		
answers the prince. Among just and good men <sup>125</sup> his impious doctrines	20	
sufficiently refute themselves, and they		
have been fully disproved by many of the		
most learned men : by Prierias, Catharinus,		
Eck, Caspar, Cochlaeus, Emser, Radinus		
of Piacenza, Faber, and many others likewise. Partly through report,	25	
partly through my own reading, I perceive that these men have most		
skillfully exposed the fellow's madness with sound and true reasoning.		
The Reverend Father John Fisher, Bishop of Rochester, a man distin-		
guished for his wealth of learning and above all for the holiness of his		
life, has so exposed and exploded his assertions that if Luther has any	30	
sense of shame he will buy up now at a high price his assertions, con-		
signed to the flames long ago by himself, in fact together with himself,		
rather than have the Christian world behold, to his deep and ever-		
lasting disgrace, his monstrous offspring and foul Erichthonius.		
Certainly, as far as the primacy of the pope is concerned, the same	35	
venerable bishop <sup>126</sup> rendered the matter very		
clear from the gospels, from the Acts of the		
Apostles, from the whole body of the Old Testament, from the agree-		
ment of all the holy fathers, not only the Latin but also the Greek, of		

 $<sup>^{125}</sup>$  Those who have refuted Luther on those points which the author mentioned above  $^{126}$  John Bishop of Rochester

whose extreme opposition Luther likes to boast, and finally from the fact that the Armenians and Greeks were defeated, and admitted themselves defeated, by definition of a general council after the most stubborn resistance. Consequently, I considered that I would be	
acting uselessly and opening a closed issue if I were to weave a fresh web of writing about the primacy of the pope. I am moved to obedient submission to this See by all those argu- ments which learned and holy men have assembled in support of this	5
point; moreover, I am indeed moved not least by a fact which we	
have so often noticed; that not only has no one been hostile to the	10
Christian faith without at the same time declaring war on that See, but	
also there has never been anyone who de-	
clared himself an enemy of that See without	
shortly afterwards declaring himself also a notorious and foremost enemy and traitor	15
both to Christ and to our religion. <sup>127</sup> I am also much moved by the	15
consideration that if the faults of men should be imputed to their	
offices in this manner, not only will the papacy not endure but also	
royal power, and supreme magistracy, and the consulate and every	
administrative office whatever will fall into ruin and the people will	20
be without a ruler, without law and order. If this should ever happen,	
and it seems to threaten in several places of Germany, then men will	
finally realize at great loss what a profound difference there is in	
human affairs between having even bad rulers and having no rulers.	
Surely, as regards the pope, God who put him in charge of His	25
church knew what an evil it would have been to have lacked a pope;	
and I do not think one should desire the Christian world to learn this	
by experience at its own risk. How much more should we desire <sup>128</sup> God	
to make such men popes as will befit the Christian commonwealth	
and the dignity of the apostolic office, so that, freely spurning riches	30
and earthly honors, they may breathe a	
wholly heavenly spirit, promote piety	
among the people, procure peace and	
exercise the authority which they have	
received from God against the satraps and strong hunters of the	35
world, pursuing with the most terrible punishments and delivering	
up to Satan anyone who either usurps another's authority or misuses	
his own. The Christian world would shortly realize, from one or two	
such pontiffs, how much more satisfactory it is for the popes to be	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>127</sup> That no one has resisted the Roman See who did not also throw off the yoke of Christ<sup>128</sup> We should rather desire to have such a pontiff than throw out the pontificate

reformed than to be removed. Nor is there any doubt that Christ would long ago have been mindful of the pastor of His flock if the Christian people had preferred to pray for the salvation of their father rather than persecute him, and to cover the nakedness of their father rather than laugh at his exposure. But God, Luther, will not abandon His vicar. He will one day be mindful of him and is perhaps mindful of him now as He scourges the father by means of the anguish which he suffers from his most profligate son. For I think, Luther, that you are clearly the scourge of God, to the great good of that See, but to your own great harm. God will act as a devoted mother is wont, who when she has whipped her son wipes away his tears and, to satisfy the boy, immediately throws the hated rod into the fire.

But setting aside the question of the papacy, which I would not have dealt with in this passage if Luther had not intermingled it with his discussion of the church, let us come now to that whole stratagem of Luther's with which he boasts that he has overthrown the church of Christ from her foundation and by means of which he brags that Catharinus has been conclusively convicted of impiety and heresy. But you will see, reader, that, whereas in many other passages Luther has proved that he is impious and stupid, in this passage he has taken great pains lest he seem to have proved this fact more clearly elsewhere. And so he writes as follows:<sup>129</sup>

First of all, as Catharinus admits, Christ is

speaking about the rock and the church.

Secondly, he will admit that Christ promises that the gates of hell will 25 not prevail against her. Are these points clear, Catharinus? No beast, but Christ says them. Let this hold then, that the gates of hell do not prevail against either the rock or the church. But the gates of hell prevail whenever they force one into sin. Otherwise, you tell me what else it means for "the gates of hell to prevail." And the contrary holds 30 also. "To be built upon a rock" is to grow in grace and good works, so that you can say that this is what it means for "the gates of Sion to prevail." Thus, 1 Peter 2 says: "Be you yourselves as living stones built thereon into a spiritual house." And Ephesians 2: "In Him you too are being built together into a dwelling place of God in the Holy 35 Spirit." And, lest you escape from me, suppose that the pope or your rock or your church have an unformed faith; nonetheless, if he is not in charity he is subject to the power of the devil and to the gates of hell. Romans 8 says: "But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ." And in Matthew 7, those who had had an 40

5

10

15

<sup>129</sup> Luther's words

unformed faith and had worked miracles and had taught rightly, hear these words addressed to them: "Depart from me, you workers of iniquity." I ask you, Catharinus, man, Italian, Thomist, to deign to listen here for a little while to the beast. Through these texts I force you to grant that he who is without charity is subject to the devil and 5 does not belong to Christ, and that as a result the gates of hell have prevailed against him and have dominion over him as over a slave of sin. As Christ says in John 8: "Everyone who commits sin is a slave of sin." Are not even these words clear enough? Or do you need here Origen, Chrysostom, or even the whole catalogue of the fathers? 10 Finally, you also grant that the pope whom you call the rock, and those built upon this rock subject to his visible administration whom you call the church, do at times sin and have sinned. You grant this, do you not? In fact, if you would confess the truth, there is no more vicious race on earth than that which today adheres most obstinately 15 to the pope; these especially are built upon him and for this reason are subject to the gates of hell and are the slaves of every crime. Answer now. Where is the most verbose farrago of this whole disputation of yours? Indicate to me the church, the rock against which the gates of hell do not prevail. Why do you not indicate it? Do you not 20 hear, Catharinus? You will not indicate the pope, I know, or the papists. Which, then, will you indicate? Not any external church, still less the Roman. Because, if you listen to Christ, you will indicate only that church which is without sin; namely, the mistress of the gates of hell. No matter which one you indicate, it is uncertain 25 whether or not she is in sin and subject to the gates of hell. If you indicate Rome, she herself will testify that she is a Lernian quagmire of crimes. Therefore, I conclude against you, with demonstrative proof, that

Therefore, I conclude against you, with demonstrative proof, thatthe words of Christ in Matthew 16 do not pertain to any one person,but only to the church built in the Spirit upon the rock, Christ, notupon the pope or upon the Roman church.<sup>130</sup> As soon as you indicatean unholy pope, so soon do you indicatenot the rock or the church, but the sludgeof sin and the synagogue of Satan. Butsince it could not be known even of SaintPeter, if he were present, whether he were holy and would remainwithout sin, it is therefore necessary that not even he is the rock, butonly Christ is, who alone is and remains most certainly without sin,and with Him His holy church in the Spirit.40

Let us return to the stipulated agreement. I have caught you in this one error, Catharinus, and I have fettered you with an unbreakable

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>130</sup> Which in Luther's opinion is the rock upon which the church of Christ is built?

bond, whereby I proclaim you a convicted heretic, <sup>131</sup> and, together with this great book of yours, condemned and cursed. Do you have earthing to mutter here. Cathori	
have anything to mutter here, Cathari- nus? Arise, man, Thomist, and crush this accursed beast which so suddenly not only answers all your fic- tions but also reduces them to nothing. Therefore, as this rock without sin, invisible and spiritual, is perceptible by faith alone, so also	5
necessarily the church without sin, invisible and spiritual, is per- ceptible by faith alone; for the foundation should have a superstruc- ture of the same character as itself. Thus we say: "I believe in the holy catholic church." But faith is "the evidence of things that are not seen." Consequently, the words in Matthew, "Thou art Peter," are	10
removed as far as possible from the papacy and its visible church. In fact, this text overthrows it from its foundation and makes it a synagogue of Satan.	15
Further, if by the "rock" were understood the pope, and by the "church built on the rock" were understood the congregation obedient to the pope, it follows that the pope is not a pope nor is the church a church. I will clearly demonstrate this as follows. The rock and the	20
church ought to be without sin, not sub- ject to the gates of hell. <sup>132</sup> But since no one on earth can certainly and infallibly be	
thus, and yet we ought to be certain about the rock and the church, it follows that there is no pope and no church. Since, then, this authority of Christ opposes the pope and the papist church, it is plainly evident that the opinion of Catharinus and	25
of his Thomas and of all his authorities is heretical in the utmost degree. For that man is a heretic who explains the holy scriptures in a sense different than the Spirit demands; but Catharinus not only does this along with his heretical Thomas, <sup>133</sup> but he even attributes to the scriptures a blasphemous sense by calling the rock a	30
man of sin, a slave of the devil.	
Behold, reader, the truly accursed beast of which the Apocalypse 13 says: "Who is like to the beast, and who will be able to fight with it? And there was given to it a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies. And it opened its mouth for blasphemies against God,	35
to blaspheme His name and His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven. But the time will come when the beast shall be cast into the	40

pool of burning fire and sulphur." Meanwhile, as God foresaw, it is

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>131</sup> Are you allowed to declare against a good man what you say the pope is not allowed to declare against a heretic?
<sup>132</sup> Therefore, Christ never built what he promised

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>133</sup> Thomas a saint, Luther a heretic

well that this unsubdued and accursed beast should always contradict himself. He admits that the church is certain, yet discusses her in such a way as to render her most uncertain; and he is not content to judge in a human manner; while pursuing and manifesting a kind of con- cealed and hidden wisdom, he reduces the palpable and commonly known church to an invisible one, <sup>134</sup> from an external to an	5
<ul> <li>internal one, from an internal one he utterly reduces her to no</li> <li>church at all, as you shall immediately see proved.</li> <li>But first, Luther, to return with you to the first premise from which</li> <li>you deduce these splendid syllogisms: Christ promises that the gates</li> <li>of hell shall not prevail against the church; now, what if someone</li> </ul>	10
should deny that He promises that which you assume as manifest, namely, that the devil will not be so powerful that he can force the church into sin? But if we should say: "Prove this to us, Luther," what else will you answer but to ask of us in turn what else this text can signify? If it can signify anything else, you have said nothing until	15
you have demonstrated by reason or by the scriptures that your interpretation is the truer one. And so, I say in the first place that the gates of hell do not signify the devil, for the gates of a house are not the same as its master, nor are the gates of hell the same as the devil. Christ, therefore, meant something different by this figurative lan-	20
guage; and although it is true that the devil will not prevail against the faith of Peter or against the power given to Peter of binding and of loosing which has been passed on in an unbroken succession, and although Christ promised this elsewhere in more than one passage, nevertheless, in this passage, where He does not name Satan or hell,	25
but the gates of hell, it may not be so probable that He was speaking of the devil as of someone else who would not prevail against His church; for I would say that the devil was not the gates of hell so much as the way to hell.	30
But if you ask what else the gates of hell can be besides Satan, I will present to you, not by my own contrivance but in accordance with the interpretation of the ancients, two kinds of gates: <sup>135</sup> one the rulers and sovereigns of the world who persecuted the infant church but did not prevail against her; the	35
other gate, I say, is you and men like you, if there ever has been anyone like you, heretics and antichrists who amid the wheat of a unanimous	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>134</sup> To what point Luther reduces the church<sup>135</sup> How those gates of hell mentioned by Christ are to be interpreted

and harmonious faith do not cease to sow the weeds of sects and schisms, who strive not only to rend the seamless robe of Christ but even to destroy His name and faith by craftily undermining it. For through heretics, as through the wide-open gates of hell, the wretches whom you deceive enter into hell. Yet the word of Christ will stand firm. However much you attack the church, you will not prevail against her. The church of Christ will stand firm before your raging and gnashing.

You see here, my good fellow, that your excellent demonstration demonstrates nothing unless you first demonstrate that in this text Christ was designating by the gates of hell the devil; for the ancient writers interpreted them to mean those who persecuted the church physically, the tyrants, and those who assault her spiritually, you heretics. But now, suppose that we grant you that the gates of hell signify the devil; we could still deny your statement that in this passage the expression, "the gates of hell prevail," has anything to do with sin; rather, Christ was promising that no wiles of the devil would be powerful enough to extinguish the faith of the church which He was committing to the care of Peter, or be able to impair his authority and power of binding and loosing; we see that this promise has been realized up till now.

Although this statement is truer than truth itself, nevertheless, in order that you may perceive in many ways how you say nothing at all when you think you have spoken most prettily, we will grant you still more, if you wish: not only that the gates of hell signify the devil but this whole passage does pertain to sin. Yet even so I will deny that in these words of Christ the phrase, "to prevail," means what you interpret; that is, that "to prevail" means to force into sin in some way. The gate of hell has not prevailed against everyone whom the devil has overthrown, but it prevails only against the man who is finally so completely overthrown that he cannot rise again to the fight. In warfare no one is said to be conquered who, though prostrate on the earth, still fights back and tries to rise again to the fight. Why, this is what the very name "gate" seems to show; unless one thinks that the name was thoughtlessly established. For the function of a gate is twofold: it either shuts out those who try to enter, or it confines those who are shut in and does not allow them to go out. But the gates hell do not shut out anyone, since to those who wish to enter, "the door of Pluto's court lies open night and day; but to retrace one's step

151

5

10

15

20

25

30

and escape to the upper world, this is work, this is toil." Accordingly,		153
it is indeed clear that the gates of hell do not prevail against everyone		
whom the devil has allured but only against the one whom the devil		
holds so confined that he can never break out. He who forces his way		
out has prevailed against the gates. That the gates of hell do not	5	
prevail against everyone whom the devil casts into sin is indicated		
by this text: "The just man falls seven times a day." It is clear,		
then, that the gates of hell prevail against no one except him whom		
they so enclose that he can never get out. Since this does not happen		
to anyone in the present life, it is clear that these words of Christ do	10	
not prevent even sinners being able to belong to the Church in		
this life.		
Behold, my good man, your excellent demonstration! No part of it		
demonstrates anything else than your doltish and scurrilous impiety.		
For I have now indicated an interpretation of these words consonant	15	
with the opinions of ancient holy men and with the scriptures them-		
selves which clearly refutes and disproves your interpretation. Now		
let me add this: that even if all those who have ever read the sacred		
writings should admit that they do not clearly understand what		
Christ meant in saying that the gates of hell would not prevail against	20	
His church, still, no one can be unaware of the fact that the meaning		
which you yourself allege is completely false and utterly contrary to		
the teaching of Christ.		
To return from that scoundrel to you, honest reader, I ask you		
to consider this fact: Luther not only says in this argument that no	25	
one belongs to the church so long as he is in sin-this statement		
alone would be false and impious—he makes the far more impu-		
dent and impious statement that one who belongs to the church		
does not sin, indeed, cannot sin. For he says that "the gates of hell		
shall not prevail" is the same as "not to be able to force one into	30	
sin"; from which it clearly follows that those who once belong to the		
church can never be forced into sin and that those who have been		
forced into sin have never belonged to the church. In case you doubt		
that he means precisely this, nothing else at all is expressed in those		
famous deductions in which the swine syllogizes filthily as follows: <sup>136</sup>	35	
That which does not yield to the gates of		
hell is the church built upon the rock. But		

the sect of the popes yields to the gates of hell. Therefore the sect of the popes is not the church.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>136</sup> Luther's words

"To yield to the gates of hell" he terms nothing other than "to sin," which he declares in another syllogism, thus:	
Every church which sins yields to the gates of hell. But the church of the papists sins. Therefore the church of the papists yields to the gates of hell	5
You see here, reader, that he clearly says that the church which sins is not the church of Christ, and he makes no distinction whatever as to the sin but quite simply asserts that the gates of hell prevail against one whom they have forced into any sin whatever. Since he says this, he clearly asserts that every sin is mortal and that those who belong to the church cannot be forced into any sin at all and that those who are forced into sin did not belong to the church even before they were forced into sin. If anyone still doubts that this is his opinion, let him consider also the following statement.	10
As soon as you point out an unholy pope, so soon have you pointed out not the rock nor the church but the sludge of sin and the synagogue of Satan.	15
At the same time consider the severity of this censor in whose judgment it is not enough for a man to be moderately virtuous but he must be either wholly a saint or wholly Satan. In presenting syllogisms such as that, he offers at this point an opportunity to draw a conclu- sion about himself, since it is not so very difficult to prove that he is not a saint; he himself has thereby deduced the logical conclusion: that he is the sludge of sin and the sanctuary of Satan. But let us leave his sanctity in the sludge of Satan; consider, reader, what follows.	20 25
Since it could not be known even of Saint Peter, if he were present, whether he was a saint and would remain without sin, it is therefore necessary that not even he is the rock	
Luther says the same thing of the rock as he says of the church, for he says that the rock and the church, the foundation and the building, should be of the same character.	30
As this rock, namely Christ, is without sin, even so it is necessary that the church also be without sin, for the foundation should have a building of the same character as itself.	35

It is necessary that Christ alone be the rock since it is most certain that He alone is and remains without sin, and together with Him His holy church in the Spirit.	5
What does he say about her? That it is most certain that she is and she is and remains holy, since she is of the same character as her rock; and so he argues it is certain that, whatever she may be, she both is and remains holy, but that it is not certain concerning any man whether he belongs to her. And so you see clearly from these passages and from his state- ment that those who belong to the church cannot be forced into sin, that Luther openly asserts that Christians belong to the church only on condition that they are not only holy but also will remain holy; for	10
otherwise not even while they are saints do they constitute the church. If Saint Peter were still living, it would be uncertain whether he were the rock, not only because it would be uncertain whether he were holy but also because it would be uncertain whether he would remain holy.	15
I ask you, reader, when he says this, what church does he leave on earth? Does he not completely abolish every church, external and in- ternal, visible and invisible, spiritual and physical? What man is anywhere who does not sin? Who is so spiritual that the weak- ness of the flesh is utterly lacking in him? Who has so much of the	20
divine spirit that the devil never prevails on him to any extent? Have we not all sinned and do we not all need the grace of God? Is it not a fact that if we say we do not have sin, the truth is not in us? Now I am wondering about this: where during all this time has that famous teaching of Luther's fled, that the just man, even by doing good, commits sin? If this is not true, as well as that statement which	25
he defended for so long with such great effort, "that every good work is a sin," it surely follows either that there is no church at all on earth or that his statement that she does not sin is so false that on the con- trary she of necessity sins entirely and sins incessantly. With the one teaching he abolishes all indifferent actions; whatever anyone belong-	30
ing to the church does must be either a good or an evil action. In the case of an evil act there is no doubt that one sins; but if he sins even in every good work, who does not see that it follows of necessity that there is no one in the church who does not sin incessantly? So far are	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>137</sup> Luther's words

those who form the church from not yielding to the gates of hell, if, as this fellow says, to yield to the gates of hell be nothing else than to sin in any manner whatever. There is no one who does not yield in this way.

But I almost divine what he means. He means, I think, that every single good work is a sin because it can be the occasion of pride, and on the other hand every bad work is a virtue because it is the occasion of humility; and since every kind of evil may be done by the faithful-I mean the faithful with a faith not unformed as is the papist faith but with a faith formed according to the form which Luther teaches, that is, by trusting firmly that no sin can damn a Christian except lack of faith alone-then that evil, whatever kind it may be, if his faith remains firm or returns, is swallowed up in faith, without satisfaction, without contrition, without confession; unless someone should wish, as he says, for the sake of consolation to confess to women. Even these Luther consecrates as our priests. To Luther, then, all good works are sins; and yet his church has no sins, for not only are sins not imputed to her but they are even rewarded. "For to the just all things work together unto good"; and so the good works of the papists, vigils, alms, prayers, chastity, fastings and other works of that kind are nothing else but unmixed sins because of weak faith, by reason of which they do not trust that faith alone without works suffices: but the evil works of the Lutherists, drunkenness, adultery, robbery, blasphemy, and in fine a whole catalogue of such evils, because of their firm faith, by reason of which they trust firmly that faith alone suffices and that there is no need of good works, are nothing else but unmixed virtues. The Lutheran church, therefore, does not need to make supplication on behalf of their sins, because they do not sin. The church of Christ, on the other hand, which Luther argues cannot sin, is taught by Christ Himself that her sins must be explated by prayers: "And she cries out daily, 'Forgive us our trespasses.' "

Now if Luther were saying that out of this common multitude of Christians who repeatedly sin and repeatedly rise from sin, only those form the church, not who never sin—for there are none such—but who are without sin, even though they have sinned often and often will sin, and that in this life these same men through a frequent change now belong to the church, now do not belong to the church, having been driven out of it by their sin, however slight, even though they are not banished by any human decree, he would still be talking

159

10

5

15

20

25

30

nonsense. When we ask which is that church by whose authority Luther admits that the sacred scriptures have been committed to us, will he say that it is only those who are without sin? That those who are in sin must not be believed at all, for during such time they are not of the church? According to this reasoning we would, on a particular matter, believe the same man today, not believe him tomorrow, believe him at sunrise, not believe him at sunset. Or rather, indeed, we would not believe anyone at all, for we could not know of other men which one was in sin, which was out of it, since no one may be sure even concerning himself whether he is worthy of hatred or love. Luther rails against the bishops because they so readily excommunicate Christians, whereas he himself excommunicates everyone still more readily, since he casts out of the church on the spot anyone who has sinned in any manner whatever.

Who would not wonder at Luther's judgment on this point, when he sees that Luther's brother, Judas the traitor, even after his crime was plotted and perpetrated, still nevertheless belonged to the church so long as he lived was not expelled from the apostleship, although he was called a devil by the mouth of Christ Himself. But Luther, an eminently just man, not only expels his brother Judas from the church after his sin but does not admit either him or Saint Peter into the church, even before he sinned. If they had previously belonged to the church, the gates of hell could not, so he argues, have forced them into sin. Therefore, if Luther is speaking truly, Saint Peter did not belong to the church even at the time that Christ said to him, "Blessed art thou, Simon Bar Jona," and, "Thou art Peter and upon this rock I will build my church." For the gates of hell later prevailed against him, if "to prevail" is, as Luther says, to force into sin. For a little later, Peter advised Christ not to endure suffering and heard from Him: "Get behind me, Satan." Later also he denied his Lord three times. Therefore, if the gates of hell prevail against all those who sin, yet no one does not sin exceedingly if Luther's doctrine is true, then it is clear that there is no church at all on earth. But it is worth observing how feebly he poses to himself the objec-

tion of the absurdity that would follow if the church were nothing but a kind of spiritual entity and her whereabouts could not be known; and how much more feebly he solves that self-posed objection. 161

5

10

15

20

25

30

But <sup>138</sup> you will say: If the church is wholly in the spirit and a thing altogether spiritual, then no one will be able to know the whereabouts of any part of her in the whole world; a thing which is extremely absurd. The reason we claim a pope is that the church may be found in a definite place. Otherwise, why does Christ teach that His sheep should be fed, and Paul that the church should be ruled, and Peter that the flock of Christ should be fed, if the faithful can never be discovered dwelling bodily in definite places on the earth? Who would preach to spirits; or what spirit preaches to you? The church, therefore, will necessarily possess a body and a location, and then among these latter, some principal location and principal body.	5 10
You have heard, reader, how feebly he poses this objection to him- self as though the church should be recognized only in order that one can know to what congregation the gospel is being preached, whereas on the contrary the church needs to be recognized much more so that one can know by whom the gospel is being preached, so that if different persons preach different things, the authority of the church may give the listener certainty as to the true preacher of the gospel and reject the false one, just as her authority, even by Luther's admission gives the reader certainty as to the identity of the true	15 20
scriptures. As for the objection he poses to himself as though it were from us, namely that one should recognize where the church can be found so that there may be a definite congregation of Christ to whom the gospel should be preached, I do not know who but he would have posed that objection to him, since no one but he is so dull-witted as not to understand that the word of God must be preached even outside the church of Christ and that anyone who should preach it to un- believers would be doing a good work. Otherwise, the apostles would have acted wrongly in spreading the faith among the gentiles by their preaching. But hear how, after so feebly posing this very objection, he solves it still more feebly.	25 30
I <sup>139</sup> answer: Although the church lives in the flesh, nevertheless she does not live according to the flesh, as Paul says in Galatians I, and Corinthians I. Thus, with the attribute of location she engages in the activities and works of the world, but she is not valued according to them. For Christ	35

works of the world, but she is not valued according to them. For Christ

 $<sup>^{\</sup>rm 138}$  Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>139</sup> Luther's words

does away with all place when He says: "The kingdom of God comes unawares, and they will not say it is here or there"; and, "Behold, the kingdom of God is within us." Paul does away with all body when he says: "With God there is no respect of persons." As the church does not exist in this life without food and drink, and yet the kingdom of 5 God does not consist of food and drink, according to Paul, so the church does not exist without place and body, and yet body and place do not constitute the church and are not proper to her. Therefore, as it is not necessary for the church and all the faithful to have particular food, particular drink, particular clothing, although they 10 cannot live in this world without food, without drink, without clothing, but all things are optional and indifferent, so it is not necessary to have a particular place and a particular person, although she cannot exist without place and person, but all things are indifferent and optional: every place suits the Christian, and no place is 15 necessary for the Christian; every person can feed him and no particular person is necessary to feed him; for here reigns liberty of spirit, which makes all corporal and earthly things indifferent, none of them necessary.

And why should this be strange, since in order to exist as a man you 20 do not require from a physical aspect any particular place, any particular person, but you can be a man in any place and with any person. Indeed, what earthly thing clings and is bound by necessity to any other; does not everything rather relate freely and indifferently to everything else, so that the whole of creation appears full of the liberty 25 of the spirit, as we sing: "The heavens and the earth are full of thy glory." What, then, is the madness of the utterly impious papists that they bind to particular and necessary persons and places the church of God, which of all things is most free as to its place and person. Thus they say that a man is not a Christian who has not adored this pope, 30 even though impious, dwelling in this place. Nor is it of any use for a man to have indifferently any pastor he chooses in any place he chooses. This is that abomination standing in the holy place and the working of error. But of this elsewhere.

I ask you, reader, have you ever heard the like? To pass over the 35 scriptural texts cited so absurdly that nothing more absurd can be alleged, does he not handle this argument as though we were demanding that a particular place be assigned to the church in such a way that the church cannot exist in any other place? But I ask you: Who ever thought that the location of the church had to be so definite that 40 he thought there was some place in which the church could not take

root, since, on the contrary, we believe that someday there will be not a place on earth in which the church will not exist, when the time shall have come in which there will be formed one flock and one shepherd.	
Secondly, he treats the question of the pontifical office as though those who maintain the primacy of the pope judge that the pope is head of the church as a Roman, not as the successor of Peter; whereas everyone knows that the see referred to has been in other places at	5
other times. And although God seems to have chosen the city of Rome, as the most renowned place in all the world, nevertheless no one of those who maintain the primacy of its see has any doubt that wher- ever the see of Peter may be transferred, there also would be trans- ferred the authority of Peter. But neither does anyone doubt, even if	10
it is true that there is no place in the whole world where there cannot be a congregation of the faithful, that there must still necessarily be some place in which a definite church may be recognizable and certain. Otherwise no one could be certain which are the true scrip-	15
tures, nor could any one know where to turn who, as yet an unbeliever, wishes to be instructed in the faith and to learn thoroughly the Christian teachings. But now it will be worth while to consider carefully the scriptural passages which he has cited above in support of his position, as	20
though ready to prove clearly from them that the church militant on earth has not been recognized in this palpable and perceptible church, but in some other multitude of Christians, somehow imperceptible and mathematical—like Platonic Ideas—which is both in some place and in no place, is in the flesh and is out of the flesh, which is wholly involved in sins and yet does not sin at all. This fellow posits each	25
proposition with equal force when he claims that every good work is a sin and considers the church as men who do not sin. But now let us carefully consider his scriptural texts.	30
Paul, <sup>140</sup> he says, states in Galatians I and Corinthians I that, although the church lives in the flesh, nevertheless she does not live according to the flesh.	
I ask you, Luther: Do you call an occasional act of sin "living according to the flesh"? Certainly whoever has any sense will say that living according to the flesh refers not to one who, while struggling against the flesh and trying to serve the spirit, nonetheless	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>140</sup> Luther's words

yields occasionally to the flesh and is overcome by the condition of human frailty, but rather to one who, seeking pleasure, surrenders himself as a slave to the flesh and devotes his life to the	
works of the flesh. <sup>141</sup> This, Luther, and not an occasional act of sin, is "living according to the flesh." Consequently, the church does not live according to the flesh, even if no one lives in such a way as not to need to pray constantly that his sins may be forgiven him. And yet	5
there are those in the church who do live according to the flesh; they will not be in the church when she will live in heaven; in the mean- time the apostle frequently warns and chides these men. In the epistle to the Corinthians he even cast out the man who had dishonored his steps other, and afterward measures the position there is a not set.	10
stepmother, and afterward receives the penitent back again. And yet at same man belonged to the church after the commission of his	
crime until the apostle cast him out.	15
Then, how valid is your statement that Christ does away with	
every kind of place when He says: "The kingdom of heaven comes unawares. Neither will they say, 'Behold, here it is,' or, 'Behold, there	
it is.'" You often protest that Catharinus speaks in equivocations,	
and yet you deride distinctions so that you may be free to sport with	20
equivocations. What is farther from the point at issue than this text of	
scripture which speaks of Christ's coming for judgment when He shall	
exalt the church to heaven; whereas our inquiry is about the church	
which now sojourns on earth? But how much more absurdly you	25
quote: "The kingdom of God is within you," which undoubtedly refers to any good and genuinely Christian heart; within which there	23
is not, in my opinion, the church which is the congregation of the	
faithful.	
Of similar force is your statement that Paul does away with every	
kind of body when he says: "With God there is no respect of persons";	30
as if, because God called the church to the faith from among both	
Jews and Greeks, God therefore did not place the person of Peter, nor	
of Christ Himself, in charge of the church; and as if, because with	
God there is no respect of persons, the multitude of Christians is	
therefore not the church; and as if, because God receives man into	35
heaven, not through regard to his person, but through regard to	
his merit, no one is therefore bound while on earth to obey his	
superiors.	

When Luther began writing, he promised that he would prove his

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>141</sup> What "living according to the flesh" means

arguments either by evident scriptures or by evident reason, or by the interpretation of the holy fathers, or by the decrees of the pontiffs;	
later he was driven to such a degree of madness that he contemned the	
interpretation of holy men as deceptive, he spurned natural reason as opposed to faith and religion, he burned the laws and decrees of the	5
popes because they opposed his own heresies; now, in order not to	5
admit that he has held on to nothing, he boasts that he believes only	
in the scriptures; and yet, examine the scriptural texts that he cites	
and consider the passages carefully; I have no doubt that you will	
easily perceive that he contradicts the decrees of the popes less than	10
he does the scriptures themselves, and that he contradicts the	
scriptures less than he contradicts common sense. Tell me, Luther,	
what sort of reasoning is the following:	
If place and person are necessary <sup>142</sup> for salvation, then those who possess and	15
venerate this sort of thing are the saved and the saints. In these matters	15
the conclusion from a particular is of the utmost validity, since it is	
established by posterioristic propositions; for I am forced to show off	
my dialectic also to these admirable dialecticians. It is impossible that	
he who has the one thing necessary for salvation does not also have at	20
the same time everything that is necessary for salvation. And it is	
impossible that he who does not have the one thing should have any-	
thing necessary for salvation. This is very easy to prove inductively.	
But of this elsewhere.	
	05
When you will prove this elsewhere, Luther, we will answer you	25
elsewhere. Meanwhile, I suspect that there is not a man of sense who	
does not clearly see that you are without sense, unless the apostle did not have much sense; for he too considered faith necessary for salva-	
tion when he said: "Without faith it is impossible to please God";	
and yet he does not agree with you that whoever would have the faith	30
which he declared necessary for salvation would by that very fact	50
have the charity which he deemed even more necessary than faith for	
salvation. If he had thought that charity followed immediately on the	
possession of faith, why did he write the following: "If I have faith so	
that I can remove mountains but have not charity, I am nothing"?	35
But of course the reason for this was that Luther had not yet been	
born at that time to show off his dialectic and to be able to teach the	
apostle that such a conclusion from a particular is valid because it is	
established by posterioristic premises. But of this elsewhere.	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>142</sup> Luther's words

Because it is certain, then, that it is uncertain who are good men, it follows that this multitude which constitutes the catholic church, this church, I say, from which the faith is learned and the scripture determined, is the common multitude of those who profess the name and faith of Christ, even though their life may not correspond to their profession. Now this is so true, reader, that not even Luther, who readily conceals whatever he cannot solve, could keep silent. For he admits that the church should be known for certain. But, lest he be	5
forced to admit likewise the truth that the church is this multitude which we all know now by the name of the Christian people, almost all of whom acknowledge the primacy of the pontiff, he turns every stone and gives some signs of his spiritual church through which he would have her rendered sufficiently well known; all these signs are	10
not enough to render sufficiently well known the church he describes, and they all apply to this very church which he says is not true and which he calls papist. Thus, he is doubly foolish, since he neither arrives at the goal toward which he strains so mightily, and he falls into the position which he is above all trying to escape. For he makes the following statement:	15
If by the rock is understood the pope, <sup>143</sup> and by the church built on it is understood the congregation obedient to the pope, it follows that the pope is not a pope, nor is the church a church; which I clearly prove thus: The	20
rock and the church ought to be without sin, not subject to the gates of hell. But since no one on earth can certainly and infallibly be thus, and yet the rock ought to be certain and the church certain, it follows that there is no pope and no church.	25
You see, reader, how he here admits that not only the rock but also the church ought to be certain. But incidentally I ask you to consider this statement very carefully. Does he not here clearly reason to a conclusion which, if it were as evidently true as it is evidently false, would abolish not only this church which he endeavors to assault but every church altogether insofar as it is earthly? Suppose any church	30
you will, Luther, and by means of this single reasoning of yours I will twice prove that it is no church; which, to use your words, I clearly prove thus: The church ought to be without sins, not subject to the gates of hell. But since no one on earth can certainly and infallibly be thus, and yet the church ought to be certain, it therefore follows that there is no church.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>143</sup> Luther's words

You see, Luther, that this brilliant argument of yours attacks your		175
adversary less than it attacks you; indeed it does not attack him at all,		
whereas it stabs you to the heart. We, who say that it is not necessary		
for the church while she is fighting on earth to be without sin, are in a		
position of safety; but you, who judge that this is necessary, and yet	5	
admit that no one is without sin, and who declare that even good		
works are sins and that the just man sins by doing good works, you, I		
say, even if the church did not need to be certain, are nevertheless		
clearly convicted of having abolished every church from the whole		
earth; which, to use your words again, I clearly prove thus: The	10	
church ought to be without sin, but no one is without sin, therefore		
there is no church. Disentangle yourself from this web, Luther, in		
which your stupidity has entangled you.		
But this is incidental, since I had no other intention than to show		
that even Luther admits that the church ought to be known for	15	
certain. I return, then, to my exposition of the signs by which Luther		
tries to render certain that internal, spiritual, and hidden church		
which he defines as the only church. He writes as follows:		
By what signs, <sup>144</sup> therefore, shall I recognize		
the church, for some sensible sign should	20	
be given by which we may be gathered together into one to hear		
the word of God? I answer: A sign is necessary, and we have it;		
namely, baptism, the bread, and above all the gospel. These are the		
three signs, tokens, and marks of Christians. Where you see baptism		
and the bread and the gospel, in whatever place, among whatever	25	
persons, there you will undoubtedly find the church. For on these signs		
Christ wishes us to agree, as Ephesians 4 says: "One faith, one baptism,		
one Lord." Where there is the same gospel, there is the same faith,		
hope, the same charity, the same spirit, and in fact everything is the		
same. This is the unity of the spirit, not of place, not of person, not of	30	
things, not of bodies, for the preservation of which Paul commands us		
to be anxious. But where you do not see the gospel (as we see in the		
synagogue of the papists and Thomists), there you may know without		
a doubt that the church does not exist, even if they baptize and partake		
of the altar, unless you except children and simple folk; but you may	35	
know that Babylon is there, full of sorceresses, satyrs, owls, ostriches,		
and other monsters; that is, stuffed with our unusual teachers. For the		
gospel, before the bread and baptism, is the single most certain and		
most excellent sign of the church, since through the gospel alone is she		
conceived, formed, nourished, begotten, brought up, fed, clothed,	40	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>144</sup> Luther's words

adorned, strengthened, armed, preserved; in short, the whole life and being of the church is in the word of God, as Christ says: "Man lives by every word which proceeds from the mouth of God."

I am not speaking of a written gospel but of a spoken one; not about just any sermon preached from the pulpit in the churches, but about 5 the genuine and authentic word which teaches the true faith of Christ, not a misshapen and Thomistic faith; the word which, having been snuffed out and suffocated by the pope and the papists, has fallen silent throughout the world. It was for this reason that Christ required nothing of His apostles with so much insistence as that they preach the gospel. Thus He required of Peter as representative of all the shepherds that he should feed the sheep; that is, teach the gospel with the living voice.

Catharinus explains this expression, quite Catharinally, as not referring to the gospel, fashioning once more from the simple meaning 15 of Christ's words as many meanings as he pleased, because he knew that the meaning, "preaching the gospel," which is the sole meaning of that expression, could not fit a pontiff burdened with so many worldly preoccupations, so that another meaning had to be contrived referring to the ruling power, according to the prediction of II Peter 20 2: "And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you." I now pass over this matter, since I have treated it fully elsewhere.

What do you say, reader? Has not the honored doctor now extricated himself neatly? Has he not clearly rendered his church 25 well known? He assumes that the church consists only of good men; he says that that congregation is known for certain by means of these three signs, baptism, the bread, and the gospel; yet not a written gospel, for the papists also have that, but a spoken one; nor yet just any sermon such as is preached from the pulpit in the churches of the 30 papists; rather, he is speaking of the authentic and genuine word such as teaches the true faith of Christ, not a misshapen Thomistic one, but this Lutheran one; namely, that faith alone suffices without good works, and that nothing can damn a man but lack of faith alone because all sins are swallowed up by faith, and that no laws bind any 35 Christian, and that there is no freedom of will but that the divine goodness is the necessary cause of human malice, and a thousand articles of this sort which the pope and the papists throughout the whole world are falsely trying to snuff out. Certainly by such preaching the church of the wicked is known for certain. 40

But in the first place, who will not commiserate with the miserable lot of us whom you deride as madmen like Margites and Coroebus, and whom you mock wittily at will, so long as you have persuaded yourself that no papist in his stupidity can detect the most obvious contradictions of a potist? First you say that the church should be 5 certain so that it can be known for certain where the gospel should be preached, for you say that it ought not to be preached, nor can it resound except for in the church; from which you see the consequence that the church must be recognized before the gospel may be preached. Next, you say that the sole sign by which the church is 10 recognized with certainty is the preaching of the gospel, for you admit that the rest of the signs are possessed by the papists also, among whom you say that the church does not exist. From this assumption of yours it follows that the gospel ought to be preached before the church can be recognized, since such preaching according to you is the sole 15 sign by which the church is recognized for certain. You see then, O most prudent father, who never contradict yourself, how consistently and carefully you join two mutually contradictory propositions; namely, that the church must be recognized before the gospel may be preached, and that the gospel must be preached before the church 20 may be recognized. Now, distinguished doctor and most proficient posteriorist, since you demonstrate the certainty of the church from the certainty of the gospel and vice versa demonstrate the certainty of the gospel from the certainty of the church, please inform me by what posterioristic rule 25 the posterior premise in this posterioristic demonstration of yours follows from the prior premise. For if you think you have sufficiently explained this as soon as you enjoin that one must first get a sure knowledge of the identity of the true church so that the gospel may be preached to her alone, and then again when men inquire about the 30 church hold that she is known for certain through the preaching of the gospel, either you necessarily have a different posterioristic premise than everyone else has had up till now, or you are poorly practiced in posterioristics. For since you still leave uncertain to whom the gospel must be preached, and since you do not consider the gospel true 35 unless it is preached to some persons or other whom you do not sufficiently specify, but conceive in your mind like Platonic Ideas, even when we seek to know it by your method of demonstration, the

chariot will return to the starting point; and if we undertake a

hundred times over to make this inference, we will always return to the same propositions by one way or the other, like the mazes of a labyrinth, and we will say that we recognize the gospel because we recognize the church, then that we know her because we know the gospel, then again that we know the gospel because we know the church. And so, fenced in continually by these barricades, when we	5
seek an exit and desire to reach a definite goal at last, we are forced to return to the same place; that is, the posterioristic premise of the honored Doctor. Since he has written that he already has a prior	
right to bespatter and besmirch the royal crown with shit, will we not have the posterior right to proclaim the beshitted tongue of this prac- itioner of posterioristics most fit to lick with his anterior the very posterior of a pissing she-mule until	10
he shall have learned more correctly to	
infer posterior conclusions from prior	15
premises?	
When a fellow declares that he is certain about the church because	
he is certain about the true gospel, but that he is certain about the	
gospel because he is certain about the church, and again that he is cer-	
tain about the church from the gospel and yet that the church must	20
first be sought so that the gospel may be preached to her alone, but	
that she cannot be discovered except through the preaching of the	
gospel, who would not believe that this fellow is either raving mad	
himself or that he thinks absolutely everyone else raving mad, since he has no consideration as to what, among whom, against whom, where,	25
when, or how he blathers, but without any occasion or reason blurts	23
out unthinkingly whatever fills his cheeks and, like the Cynics, hurls	
out any abuse whatever against any person whatever, if anyone has so	
much as dared to open his mouth against his whims, even the most	
absurd? <sup>145</sup>	30
But tell me, Luther, do you think you are in your right mind when	
you describe the true church; that is, according to you a church con-	
sisting only of good men and of those who are without sin and will	
remain without sin; that is, also according to you, a church of no	
men, since you assert that no one is without sin? But I pass over this	35
matter.	

Suppose that these statements of yours are both true: that there is some church on earth and that no one belongs to it unless he is without sin; and that no one is without sin. Nevertheless, as I have said,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>145</sup> A fit retort for the man who threatens to bespatter kings with shit

since you will have it so, suppose there is on earth a church composed of such men as are nowhere on earth. Do you think now that this church of yours, consisting of good and sinless men, is sufficiently certain and evident by these three signs: baptism, the bread and the true preaching of the gospel? In the first place, these three signs of yours are clearly in our church, which you call the church of the papists. For, concerning baptism and the bread, not even you doubt that we have these two, and so you say that the third sign is far more certain; namely, the true preaching of the gospel; this you absolutely deny that we have. But we interpret and preach the gospel according to the mind of the holy fathers; and so, if they preached truly, then there is true preaching even in this church, no member of which, you say, belongs to the true church, unless one perhaps excepts children and simple folk.

You do not assert outright that children and simple folk are cast out of the church of Christ although they belong to the church of the pope, that is, according to you, to the synagogue of Satan; and yet you allow them to be excepted from those who do not belong to the church of Christ, considering that they are perhaps without sin and will also remain without sin; and so they are numbered in the church of Christ even without what you call the true gospel, which you posit as the single most certain sign of the church and which you argue exists nowhere in the church of the pope to which these simple folk and children belong, since we papists in carefully considering the meaning of the sacred scripture walk in the footsteps of the holy fathers. But you alone preach the gospel truly, and before you no one did so. For you carefully weigh the scriptures and rely on yourself alone in regard to their meaning; nor do you rely on any of the holy fathers, knowing that, however holy they were, they were nevertheless men and often erred, as you often proclaim; whereas all the while you know, I suppose, that you are not a man at all, but you are certain that you have your doctrine from heaven, and you are certain that you can err no more than an ass-I meant to say an angel.

But I would like to ask you this, Luther: by what sign do you determine that the interpretation of scripture which seems right to you is truer than that which you see has seemed right to such numerous, such learned, and such holy fathers? You answer: from a comparison of texts. Did they then not compare texts? Do you think that they lacked such reason and judgment as now superabound in

10 15

5

20

25

30

35

you, whereas they followed right method, while you strive almost to destroy it? But God has of course opened to your seeking, according to the text: "Seek and you shall receive," for you are accustomed to boast that you are certain you have your teaching from heaven; spiritual man that you are, you have, of course, sought with sure confidence that the twofold spirit of Elias might be breathed into you, a man into whom it is clear that several myriads of evil spirits have thrust themselves. Why, therefore, do you think that the holy fathers either lacked good will or did not implore the help of God or did not have trust in God? If you argue that God is indicating to you at the present time so many, such useful, such necessary truths, why should you think that He concealed all these truths for such a long time from such holy men to the great detriment of His whole church? But He did not conceal them, Luther. Rather, God opened their eyes and responded to their humility, whereas, rejecting your arrogance, He allows you to appear wise in your own eyes, so that, together with the philosophers whom you so often deride, while saying that you are wise, you may become foolish and vanish in your own reflections; and everyone likewise may grow foolish and vanish with you who, in the matter of virtue and faith, instead of preferring to risk his soul with so many troops of saints who he does not doubt are in heaven, would rather do so with a single blasphemous buffoon whom only a blind man does not see rushing headlong to hell. Therefore, Luther, if it is true, as you say, that wherever there are

these three, baptism, bread, and the true word of God, there undoubtedly is the true church, because the sign of the word, so you say, cannot possibly resound except in the church through the Holy Spirit, then certainly, since the true gospel has been written in our church and the holy fathers have truly interpreted it, and many men read this same written gospel to us in the churches that you call papist, and preach it according to the interpretation of the holy fathers, it necessarily follows, also according to you, that that is true which you so vehemently deny: that this church which you call papist is truly the catholic church of Christ.

But I also ask this of you: If the church has not existed during this whole time among these people who obey the pope and have so long obeyed him, tell me where has it been these past five hundred years before you were born? For now of course you have been sent down, a new offspring from high heaven, to establish a church of evil men in 185

5

10

15

20

25

30

good (and before your time incorrupt) Saxony. Both Saxony and all Germany, if you speak the truth, have till now been outside the	187
church, and all their ancestors have descended into hell. The truth is	
that in heaven the latter now call down a curse upon you, who	
through malice try to turn away their posterity from following them 5	
there.	
But since we have proved as a consequence from Luther's position	
that if his signs make the church certain it is necessarily certain that	
the true church is the one which he calls false, we may now consider	_
how cleverly he sets up these three signs as infallible marks of the true 10	0
church. You remember, Luther, that you posit a church consisting	
only of men so holy that they are without sin. Come then, set before us	
any congregation you will, and since it has pleased you to play with	
letters and to argue by means of A and B as by proofs when you say	
you must philosophize dully with a dull and phlegmatic block-	5
head and thus make your deduction: "If A should dispute with B,"	
and so on with your brilliant inference; in the same manner we dull	
and phlegmatic fellows shall set forth a proposition for your thin and	
shiny black bile. So, then, you be A; your hearers B, C, D; let there be	
someone who longs to be certain about some true church, which he is 20	0
persuaded is none other than that which is without sin, and let him	
have heard that this church can be recognized with certainty by	
three signs: baptism, the bread, and the true preaching of the gospel.	
But to proceed by means of letters: let this man be E, if you will.	
Suppose, then, that E comes into the church of A, B, C, D, who he 2.	5
knows have been baptized and who he perceives have received the	
eucharist; let him moreover hear A himself preaching the gospel in	
his usual manner before B, C, D; and suppose, by an impossibility,	
that the preaching which A preaches is true and sincere preaching.	
Would E know for certain from these signs that A, B, C, D, are the 30	0
true church, according as he understands the true church; that is,	
that A, B, C, D should be good men and without sin. And I answer,	
"No"; which, to use your words, I clearly prove thus. Either E him-	
self knows the scriptures and teachings of the Christian faith and	
comes in order to hear again teachings which he knows and to increase 3.	5
his devotion by hearing them frequently, or he does not yet know	
those things, but, having heard the name of Christ, is seeking the	
church from which he may thoroughly learn the faith. If he knows	
the scriptures and the teachings of the Christian faith, then E will	

know for certain that this church of A, B, C, D, cannot be known for certain through these signs. For he is still uncertain whether A, B, C, D, are good or evil. For they can dissimulate vices as well as simulate virtues. He will recognize, moreover, that there can be good preaching among wicked men, as Christ Himself often preached to the Scribes and Pharisees; and that the truth can be preached not only by a wicked man but even by the devil; and he will recognize as utterly false your statement that the true word cannot resound except in the true church, such as is without sin; unless the prophet is lying when in the name of God he says: "But God said to the sinner, "Why do you profess my covenant with your mouth?"" Or unless the devil spoke falsely when through the mouth of a raving madman he confessed that Christ is the Son of God.

You see, therefore, Luther, that if E should understand the scriptures and doctrines of the Christian faith, then from them he will be certain that he is uncertain whether the church of A, B, C, D, is true or false; that is, whether it is good or evil, because insofar as virtue and vice are concerned, E cannot be certain by means of any of these signs of yours whether A is black or white, whether B is a good man or a toad, whether C is chalk or charcoal, whether D is deity or devil. And you see that this is true, Luther, even given the impossible supposition that the preaching of A were accurate and undoubtedly true. From this you have no trouble seeing how far your case is losing ground in the estimation of E, clearly an intelligent and virtuous person, since the preaching which A preaches is truly and without doubt utterly false.

But now let us consider another possibility. Suppose that E should not yet know either which are the true scriptures or which are the true teachings of the Christian faith but, being concerned about his salvation and having heard reports of Christ, he should wish to become thoroughly acquainted with the latter's faith and religion. E, then, as I say, comes into the church of A, B, C, D, and hears A preaching in his usual manner his usual teachings before B, C, D, and he sees B, C, D agreeing and declaring that this preaching is true. In the first place, if such teachings were true, E could still not consider the case as proven because he has heard that A, B, C, D are only a minimal fraction of those who profess the faith of Christ, nor could he after listening only to them be certain whether A, B, C, D were either professing the true scriptures or interpreting the true ones truly; nor 189

5

10

15

20

25

30

could he judge whether that which he was hearing among them was the true gospel or not; nor would he be ready to believe so few men on a matter of such profound importance without being persuaded to do so by a miracle. Therefore, when E would later travel through so many Christian nations and would perceive everywhere the same faith, the same teachings regarding what is necessary for salvation; when he would perceive from the writings of ancient holy men that all the holy doctors from the time of Christ's passion even to the present time have consistently agreed on these same points; then E would have no doubt that, if there is any true church of Christ on earth, it is this congregation which, begun by Christ, spread by the apostles, taught by the saints, has by God's special care persisted unceasingly through so many ages in the unity of the Christian faith.

Therefore, if E should later return into the church of A, B, C, D, and again hear A preaching in his usual manner his usual teachings before B, C, D, and declaring that he is preaching the true and genuine word of God and that all those Christians whom E has heard elsewhere among so many peoples are utterly deceived and damnably in error, surely it cannot but happen that E, since he sees the church of A, B, C, D to be nothing but a kind of rivulet trickling off from that great church and now violently separated from her; and since it admits nothing but the scriptures, yet does not have different scriptures but interprets them in a way different from and contrary to that in which that whole church of so many lands and so many ages interprets them; and since it arrogates their interpretation to itself in opposition to so many and such learned and such holy interpreters of so many ages, in opposition to the agreement of the whole Christian world, an agreement which E has already learned from the scriptures takes root through the Spirit of Christ; and when E sees among A, B, C, D, many extremely absurd teachings on most important topics, which are not only contrary to that catholic church, but also utterly destructive of public morals, it cannot but happen, I say, that E will understand with certainty that the church of A, B, C, D is not the church of Christ nor an assembly of good men, but that it is the hovel of the most corrupt buffoons and the brothel of Satan; and then from these facts he would recognize A either as the alpha of heretics, or as Antichrist. On the other hand, it cannot but happen that, since E is now certainly and thoroughly acquainted also with that true church which has been continues by a certain unbroken

191

5

10

15

20

25

30

succession from the one which Christ long ago established and which has ever remained uncorrupted in the faith of its origin, he will easily recognize that, however great a part has violently torn itself away from her, it will be a withered branch, lacking the divine Spirit who will remain only in His own vine, however much it may have been reduced by the pruning of its branches.

Look, Luther, you who so shamelessly proclaim that you demonstratively refute Ambrose, have you anything to mutter here to prevent your having to admit that you have been most evidently defeated and refuted by your own mode of demonstration, and that we have proved both that your church is the brothel of Satan and that the common multitude of Christians is the universally known and perceptible catholic church of Christ whose soldiers now conquer, now are conquered, so long as the church still battles on earth?

Now, since Luther makes such a fair proclamation about the many Christian nations that obey the pope as to declare positively that they are all the most wicked of all men and that the church is undoubtedly not among them, unless, as he says, one excepts children and simple folk, I should like to ask him where in the world are those grown-ups and unsimple people who never sin, whom he calls the true church. For he says that all Italy, all England, Scotland, Ireland, all of Spain and Portugal are, and until the time of his own gospel all Germany was, clearly most wicked and the synagogue of Satan. For all these nations, it is well enough known, have up till now reverently acknowledged the successor of Peter. We nevertheless judge more kindly of Saxony, which the pestiferous breath of this serpent has infected. For we hope that there also God has preserved for Himself seven times seven thousand mature and wise men who have not bent the knee to Baal.

But come, if, during the long period of time intervening between the healing death of Christ and the death-dealing birth of Luther, these nations did not form at least the greatest part of the church, tell me where on earth was the church. Even if the church is not confined to any part of the earth, nevertheless she must necessarily be in some part of it. Certainly, if she has not been in these parts of the earth, then for a long time now she has been either remarkably small or she has been nowhere. It is evident, then, that even if the church should not be the common multitude of Christians but the number of good men, whether of those who have been so thoroughly converted that

30

35

they will never sin again or of those who while frequently rising will frequently fall, who are to be considered in the church so long as they stand firm, being cast out when they have fallen and received back again when they revive, yet not even so have you proved anything. For, even of these men, it is certain that by far the greatest portion have for a long time now been among those nations which revere the See of Peter as the mother see. For there is not anywhere, nor for a long time has there been elsewhere, such a great number of peoples professing the faith of Christ. It follows, therefore, that if these nations are not the church, at least the church is within these nations; or, and this cannot be denied, by far the greatest part of the church is among them. Yet up till now in these nations, all the best men have been especially obedient to the pontiff, all the worst men have been especially rebellious against the pontiff. Men of the greatest holiness have established laws; all the best men most carefully observed the laws; all the worst men most carelessly scorned them. With one heart they all venerated the sacraments; hardly one or the other of so many people arose during so many ages to murmur anything against them; and those who did were always of known and notorious wickedness. Whichever may be the true church, therefore, such as indeed exists or has existed a long time among these peoples who are foremost in the profession of the Christian faith, it opposes and always has opposed your teachings.

But if this statement, which, clearly, more than destroys all your arguments, seems negligible to you, then mention any people among whom at any time during all the ages before your birth your heresies have been approved. Show us among which Christians there was no difference between priest and layman; among which Christians women were allowed to hear confessions; where females were believed to be priests and fitted for consecrating the Eucharist; where it was accepted that no laws bind the Christians; and a thousand similar absurdities. If you cannot do this, as you certainly cannot, then you have nothing further to prate about the church. For whichever has been the true church through so many ages, whether that has been the common multitude of good and bad men, or only the number of good men, whether in those regions which obey the Roman pontiff or anywhere else on earth, that church has always disagreed with you and has condemned your utterly insane teachings.

195

5

10

15

20

25

30

As for your statement that it is a fiction of the papists that the function of jurisdiction is one thing, that of fraternal charity another -and your statement that the gospel and the church know nothing of jurisdictions, for you say that these latter exist only through the tyrannical inventions of men-surely, if you were not an utter toper, you would easily perceive that jurisdiction and the function of charity are not altogether the same; even if it is true that there is no Christian jurisdiction which has not been instituted out of charity. But still, the authority of a ruler can and ought to do many things which the charity of any one private individual neither can nor ought to arrogate to itself. Otherwise, if jurisdiction is nothing at all, why did Paul exercise jurisdiction? Why did he deliver a man over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh? Why did he declare most clearly that he who resists authority resists the ordinance of God? Why did he command that what he himself taught should be observed? Why did he command men to obey their rulers? Why did Christ Himself order the people to obey the Scribes and Pharisees who sat in the seat of Moses? Why did He Himself present an example of jurisdiction and drive the sellers out of the temple with a whip? For that matter, why do you yourself basely conceal that in the very words of Christ, "Feed my sheep," there is a word which refutes you? You are not unaware, but you basely conceal the fact that Erasmus of Rotterdam, a man extremely learned beyond all cavil and one who has deserved very highly of the church of Christ, has noted the fact that there is in the repeated word poimainein the meaning "to rule"; but although everyone sees this, it is enough for you to pretend that you do not perceive it. I do not suppose anyone expects me to answer your extraordinary allegory in which you write that the three signs are represented by the two heads of the carrying-poles appearing outside the ark in the temple of Solomon, since you could of course have represented the same signs no less appropriately by the two tablets of Moses or by the two horns of Moses. Now I do not know how much importance you attach to this fact

which you twice let loose against us, namely that in the creed we confess that we believe in the holy catholic church, from which you infer that, since faith is the evidence of things not seen, if the church is believed in and is a matter of faith, then the church is in no way that perceptible multitude of good and bad men which is apparent to everyone and is perceived by human sense. This weapon you twice 197

10

5

15

20

25

35

take in hand; twice you hurl it forcefully, either because it seemed to you a splendid weapon and you delighted to handle it, or because you sensed that it was so dull that it needed to be hurled more frequently. On this point I am surprised first of all that the creed, which is, as it ought to be, of great weight with all the faithful, has any weight with you. For it is well known, I think, that the creed is tradition, not scripture; it is not listed in the scriptural canon, nor did any of the holy fathers, so far as I know, when he proposed to prove something from the scriptures, ever prove it from the creed. Therefore, if you, Luther, who so often cry out against tradition, who so often declare that you accept nothing but evident scriptures, if you believe in the church on the authority of the creed, then you are evidently indeed departing from your opinion and you are believing traditions, not scriptures. And I do not say this to reproach you in this matter. Indeed, I praise you exceedingly, and I would wish you did the same thing more often. It would be a matter worth applauding if you should ever begin to be capable of changing for the better, you who, more unstable than any wind, and more flighty than any leaf, repeatedly change yourself for the worse.

But meanwhile I ask you: What are you gaining for your case? Since it is clear that the church triumphant in heaven is one thing, the church militant here on earth is another, what have you proved about the latter, if the article of the creed speaks of the former, in that, having enumerated what must be believed about the divine Trinity and about the humanity of Christ, it finally presents the hoped-for reward of those who believe as something itself to be believed, since otherwise it could not be hoped for with certainty, and thus mortals who would wish to profess the faith are reminded that they should unhesitatingly believe that there will be a catholic church which, in holy fellowship, with sins forgiven, with flesh revivified, and with bodies restored, will enjoy life everlasting?

But on earth also, even if there be no uncertainty about the identity or the location of the catholic church of Christ, whose unanimous authority gives everyone certainty about the true scriptures and about necessary articles of faith, and even if it be so certain that for this reason the church is perceptible to sense, nevertheless she herself depends in many ways on faith. For, even if the identity of that church which agrees on matters of faith is evident to sense, yet it is not evident to sense that this agreement does not come about by 199

10

5

0

15

20

25

30

human conspiring but that it is divinely born and inspired, for this no one grasps except by faith. Moreover, although the body of the church is perceptible to sense, yet the fact that Christ is her mystical head is likewise shown not by sense but by faith. Indeed, this fact also, that whoever is holy on earth is part of this church, which is called holy even here on earth not because there is no one in her who sins but because no one on earth is holy who is not a member of this church; this fact, I say, is taught us by faith, not by sense. Thus, we rightly believe in the catholic church because of the many things which do not appear to sense but which depend wholly on faith, and yet it is nonetheless manifestly certain that this common and perceptible multitude of men professing the name and faith of Christ is the catholic church by whose teaching the scripture is determined and the faith is learned and recognized with certainty. Luther, however, reverts ten times to the statement that the church cannot be this common multitude, because sinners do not belong to the church; nor does he remember that in Noah's ark, which prefigured the church, unclean animals were mingled with clean ones. I ask you, Luther: When the apostle was writing to the Corinthians, did he not write to the church? Or does he, for this reason, censure no sin in the church? What about when he writes to the Galatians? Is he not there also writing to the church? And yet he calls them senseless men, and he protests that they are so much in error that he wonders who has bewitched them. Moreover, in the Revelation of John the evangelist, when the Spirit speaks to the seven churches, does He find no fault anywhere? How severely He threatens to cast out certain men unless they repent! But although they are sinning and must be vomited out if they persist in their sin, He nevertheless numbers them meanwhile within the church. Indeed, Christ Himself, while dwelling personally with His church, said of her that not all were good: "You," He said, "are clean but not all of you." And again: "Have I not chosen you twelve and one of you is a devil?" But if I wished to recall the opinions of the holy fathers which

support this opinion of mine, it would take a long time and would be useless with you who, as a single individual, make light of all men taken together; in your mind not even the agreement of the whole church has any weight whatever when she confesses, not that some sinners belong to her, but that she herself is wholly a sinner and cries out daily to the Lord: "Forgive the sins of thy church, O God." Nor 201

5

10

15

20

~

25

30

was she taught this by human counsel; but she was taught by Christ Himself, who taught His apostles also to pray that God would forgive them their sins. And so the church of Christ, while she dwells on earth, is not yet so cleansed that some sins do not constantly taint good men; and among the good men everywhere there live the wicked, who for the time being are in the church, in the same way as diseased parts are in an ulcerous body. For even though these men are not healthy, yet they are somehow still alive and are nourished by a certain warmth of the divine Spirit who animates and preserves the church, penetrating all things mightily and disposing all things sweetly. Nor, so long as the church is a wayfarer on earth, will she cease bearing sick members about with her; nor will Christ cease to intercede with the Father for the sick members. He who mourned over the ills of His mystical body and who wept bitterly for them on the cross, saying: "Far from my salvation are the words of my sins." But when the day shall come on which, laying aside corruption, she shall be clothed with immortality, then, those rotten and decaying members disappearing, the body of the church will be left utterly pure and gleaming, which in the meantime goes about and will go about diseased, but however diseased, will never go about dead. For Christ will be with her and His word, which, whether written or handed on without writing, is in either case spirit and life, together with the faith which works through love for those who believe; Christ Himself prayed to the Father that this kind of faith might never fail or be lacking to the church which Christ committed to Peter's charge. But He put Peter in charge not only of the Roman but of the

universal church, which even today does not refuse to acknowledge obediently the successor of Peter. For even if some men separate and tear themselves away from him as Dathan and Abyron and Chore with their associates separated themselves to their own great harm from Moses, nevertheless almost all the peoples who sincerely profess the faith of Christ look up to and venerate the successor of Peter as the vicar of Christ. But if these peoples, known to us and joined with us in the profession of the Christian faith, are not the catholic church, nor is the church of Christ any part of them, but is a number of secret and unknown assemblies from hither and yon who disagree both with the rest of the church and also among themselves about the faith of Christ, then to which of those groups will that man complain who has been told: "If he does not wish to reform, tell the church"? By 203

5

10

15

20

25

30

disobeying which church, I ask, will a man become to you as a heathen and a publican? Does Christ say it is a different one from that which is well-known and public? Or does He order that two or three heretics be sought somewhere, who, like the Donatists, deny	
that the catholic church is catholic? Suppose, then, that there is some Turk who should wish to come into the faith of Christ; suppose him persuaded that the true church is not this one which we call catholic; that is, the congregation of all peoples from any place whatever who profess the name and faith of	5
Christ, even though most of them may not correspond in their morals and virtue to their profession of faith; but suppose him per- suaded that the true church consists of two or three good men gathered together from hither and yon in the name of Christ, that the true faith thrives there in the midst of virtues, but that this well-	10
known and universal church of ours is not the true one, but, as it is infected with bad morals, so it is led astray by false opinions and errors instead of possessing the true faith. Now please tell me, Luther, where will he go to learn the faith? <sup>146</sup> Will he go to those whose identity he cannot know?	15
For he cannot know which men are good. Shall he then take the scriptures in hand himself? And shall he draw from them all the articles of faith, although scripture does not contain all of them and contains some of them in such a way that without a teacher the reader easily slips into errors? But who will distinguish the orthodox teacher	20
from the heretic? Or will God teach him inwardly? He certainly would so teach him had He not left a church to whom He sends those who need to be taught. The man who contemns her, persuading himself that he alone is such a darling of God that he alone is especi- ally taught by God something different from what the church publicly	25
believes and professes, then, however humble he may think himself, he is surely convicted of arrogance before God, since he believes himself to be of greater concern to God than the whole church is, and addresses God, not, as Christ teaches, "Our Father,"	30
but, as a certain proud friend of Job, "My father"; <sup>147</sup> and he does not believe God's promise to the church: "I shall be with you till the consummation of the world." Nor does he remember or stand in any awe of the fact that since the Spirit tells the church all that she needs to know, Christ orders that the man who will not hear the church	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>146</sup> He will say, "To himself"<sup>147</sup> Do you not perceive that you are being named here, Luther?

should be considered as a heathen and a publican. "If anyone," He	
says, "who has been rebuked before two or three witnesses should not	
reform, tell the church." He does not say, "Tell two or three men."	
And so He does not call two or three men the church; for it is pre-	
cisely this number of witnesses whom He distinguishes from the 5	
church.	
But if you should argue that the church does not differ from the	
witnesses in number but in merit so that in the one case number	
suffices, but in the other piety is sought, then I ask you once again:	
By what sign will you distinguish that church of three good men from 10	
any three witnesses whatever? For they can both dissimulate their	
vices and simulate virtues. To which three,	
then, will you speak when you are about	
to speak to the church? <sup>148</sup> Therefore, the catholic church is different,	
willy-nilly, from that which you represent; nor do you represent it for 15	
any other reason than that you may more freely contemn the truly	
catholic church, which, unless it were recognizable and well-known,	
would certainly not be the one before whom you can complain about	
the sin of your neighbor. If Christ orders us to submit complaints	
about moral matters to her judgment, surely much more does He 20	
order us to do so in matters of faith. "He who does not hear her	
judgment," He says, "let him be to you as the heathen and publican";	
of these the one sins in morals, the other errs in faith. You see that	
recourse must be had to the judgment of	
the church in matters of faith and of 25	
morals. <sup>149</sup> Since you do not listen to the	
judgment of this church in matters of faith, but on the contrary	
scurrilously ridicule, deride, jeer at, and contemn good works, since	
you fly swiftly toward evil works and add spurs to those who rush	
toward all the worst actions, promising them impunity through faith 30	
alone without good works for the worst crimes, you are deservedly	
denounced as a heathen by all Christians, by the voice of Christ	
Himself, and you have justly been cast out from the catholic church	
which you try to rend asunder and to reduce to two or three heretics	
who, if they should perhaps agree not to honor the Lord's day and in 35	
place of the Lord's day to establish as a feast the day of Mercury or of	
Venus, will doubtless argue that they	
clearly fulfill the precept, namely to keep	
the feast day; <sup>150</sup> that is, that day which they themselves have taken as	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>148</sup> The words are spoken to a corpse
<sup>149</sup> Where the judgments of morals and faith must be sought
<sup>150</sup> This license is not liberty

their feast. They will argue that this is an optional matter, since no particular day has been defined by any scripture, except perhaps the sabbath. But if someone should say that it is the business of the church, governed by the Holy Spirit, to determine which day should be especially dedicated to God and that she has decided on Sunday,	5
they will answer that the papist church has decided this. For the true and catholic church is themselves; that is, three men	
gathered together in the name of Christ. <sup>151</sup> And the result will thus be that to keep the feast day is nothing else but to profane the true feast and to make a feast which the whim of each one has chosen; so that, according to the saying of Tyconius: <sup>152</sup> "In	10
the long run that is holy which is holy to each one." But who will not be nauseated by this utterly absurd definition of the catholic church? For when the apostle says: "That	15
which is beyond us does not concern us," beyond which "us" is he speaking of? Is it not beyond that known church which was then known? When the same apostle wrote: "Appoint those who are rated as nothing in the church to judge," of which church is he speaking?	
Is it indeed of some other church than that which was then known as the church of Christ? However widely she was scattered, she was united by the one profession of Christ and recognized by the name of catholic. In this church whoever professed a faith different from the common faith were always considered heretics; nor was their assembly	20
the church of Christ, nor did they ever grow to such a number that they surpassed the rest of the flock professing the same name of Christ. For, although infidels and heathens have increased to such numbers that by comparison with them the Christians seem an insignificant flock, yet the heretics professing the name of Christ and claiming the	25
church for themselves never increased to such a degree as to leave anyone in doubt where the catholic church might be found. For, although a man outside the church and utterly vicious may rail against the vices of the church, yet he will never bring it about that the field of the Lord will cease to belong to the Lord because in this	30
time of growth it brings forth much cockle among the wheat, or that the net of Christ will cease to be Christ's because while it is dragged in this sea it has bad fish mixed with the good, until such time as the Lord will gather both the wheat and the good fish <sup>153</sup> and set them aside for Himself,	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>151</sup> Luther sings this trite song everywhere
<sup>152</sup> The saying of Tyconius
<sup>153</sup> Luther is a worthless fish

but Luther and his associates He will cast out into the fire. But mean-	
while, the church, His spouse, with whom He has promised to abide	
until the end of the world, although she sins at times and is often	
chastised, He nevertheless so preserves by His presence that He does	
not allow her through the fornication of infidelity to fall into the	5
worship of other gods but by His Holy Spirit, who leads her into all	
truth, He so cherishes and instructs her that He allows her to err	
neither in the faith nor in the sacraments. If you should still stir up	
controversy about her and question her identity, I will answer once	
again: that same church through whom you have known that the	10
gospel is the gospel, that same church, I say, is that catholic church	
who teaches you that the seven sacraments are sacraments; you	
cannot show why she can be deceived on the one point more than in	
both points.	
If nothing at all had been written, would you have believed the	15
church concerning all the things which actually have been written?	
You believe the church that those men were true evangelists, true	
apostles, who wrote those things which have been written; of those	
men who have done the writing not one has written that every detail	
was committed to writing. On the contrary,	20
they openly write that not everything was	
written. <sup>154</sup> Why then do you not believe the	
church concerning the rest of the things	
which have not yet been written, since you	
would have been ready to believe her otherwise about all the	25
things which have actually been written? Or, because certain things	
have been written, are the rest for that reason to be contemned?	
Why do you consider the church less reliable concerning a part than	
you would have been ready to consider her concerning the whole?	
Just because four or five individuals have written, who admit that	30
they wrote down some details but not everything, has the entire	
group of these men lost their credibility, whom you would otherwise	
have judged worthy of your credence even without their writing the	
details which have actually been written?	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>154</sup> That, on the authority of the evangelists, not everything was written which pertains to our faith

He shows how foolishly Luther trifles and how shamelessly he lies. Chapter 11.	
I think I am spending far too much time arguing with this scoundrel about such a clear matter. If any objection is brought up, he conceals it; or if he does mention any, he distorts it by misquotation; and against objections proposed by himself as though they were his adversary's he gibbers rather than deliberates. He says that we make articles of faith out of any saying of the fathers, and the scoundrel is not ashamed to tell such a bare-faced lie. <sup>155</sup>	5
Whoever presented to you as a necessary article of faith, Luther, a single statement of any father whatever? Certainly we present it as probable, and much more probable than your statement, especially because piety opened their eyes while impiety closes yours. <sup>156</sup> They were eager to understand;	10
you labor to pervert what is understood. But if it is certain that on any one point all the ancient fathers long ago agreed, we do not hesitate to oppose such thorough agreement of good men to a single dull-witted scoundrel, when it is clear that they reached agreement through that Spirit who makes those who dwell	
in a house to be of one mind. He gibbers in the same way when with a Tenedian two-edged ax he splits one thing into two kinds, as follows:	20
If you had alleged <sup>157</sup> any usage or human authority which clearly contradicts the scriptures, such as, he says, the dull-witted king produces on the matter of the second species of the sacrament, then let usage, authority, the Thomist king, Satan, even an angel from heaven be anathema.	25
Rather, let this fellow be anathema, this abuser, this cashiered friarlet, this Hussite, this Satanist from hell, who twists the sacred scripture of Christ into a sacrilegious sense opposed to the sacraments of Christ and distorts by misquotation the correct statements of men. <sup>158</sup> For the fact that	30
this most deceitful scoundrel longs to take advantage of the ignorance of his reader will do him no good when we have come to the passage in which you, reader, will see the transparent craftiness of the scoundrel who pretends that the king	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>155</sup> What else would a shameless fellow do?
<sup>156</sup> How Luther differs from the ancient fathers
<sup>157</sup> Luther's words
<sup>158</sup> So false you are, you wretched friarlet

opposes to him the authority of men, whereas he clearly opposes to him, not the authority of men, but that of the Holy Spirit.

But if, <sup>159</sup> he says, one alleges such usage or human authority as does not contradict the scriptures, I do not condemn this, but I wish it to be tolerated, provided only that Christian liberty be safe, and that it be a matter of our free choice to follow, maintain,	5
change those points when, where, how, we shall choose. <sup>160</sup> But if they wish to take captive this liberty of ours and to establish necessary articles of faith, then let him who will presume to do this be anathema, whether he be a silly Thomist, or a stupid papist, or a king or a pope; such is what our lord the king does in urging as articles of faith his sacraments of confir- mation, matrimony, orders, extreme unction, and the mingling of water and wine.	10 15
Consider carefully, reader, what the king has written on these sacraments, and you will readily recognize and ridicule the wicked calumny of the scoundrel who, answering nothing at all to what the king has proved, only says lyingly that the king opposes to him the authority of men for matters for which the prince has alleged the authority of the Holy Spirit. Let that man be anathema who will have presumed to resist the ordinance of this Spirit and to blaspheme the sacraments which Christ has consecrated in His most holy church; whether this man be a silly satanist, or a stupid potist, or a friar, or an apostate.	20 25
He very skillfully declares how ineptly, indeed how utterly senselessly Luther cites and applies the scriptures. Chapter 12.	
But now it is worth seeing how cleverly this fellow, who admits nothing but the scriptures and evident ones besides, himself cites scriptural texts which everyone evidently sees touch, as the saying goes, neither heaven nor earth.	30
We have, <sup>161</sup> he says, more than enough divine thunderbolts against these Tho-	35

mistic straws and bits of tow, where Christ, in Matthew 15, passes

<sup>161</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>159</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>160</sup> But what are these things? Are they not whatever is now written down? Do not rage so fiercely, good father

judgment on all the traditions of men, saying: "Without cause do they worship me with the doctrines and commandments of men." What is all the sludge of this masked Thomist against this one saying of Christ, <sup>162</sup> to pass over many others mentioned	5
elsewhere? If everything which man has commanded is vain, with what boldness does the doltish king make of it articles of faith for us? And so, by this single saying of Christ he lies prostrate, this unhappy and wretched defender of the Henrician church, together with his whole little book.	10
Does not the shameless folly of this scoundrel exceed anyone's expectation, in that he, clearly a trifler and an Antichrist, thunders Christ's words, "Without cause they worship me with the doctrines and commandments of men," against one who has declared and proved that the sacraments are the traditions of God, not of men? Even convicted of such shameless stupidity, he says, already exulting as a victor and conqueror:	15
With this single saying of Christ he lies prostrate, this unhappy and wretched defender of the Henrician church, together with his whole little book.	20
And these words Luther shouts because of his raging madness, conscious meanwhile that everyone sees that he cites the scriptural text with a great stupidity as great as the shamefulness of his defeat and prostration, this unhappy and wretched assailant of the catholic church, together with the whole of his most dull, diminutive brain. <sup>163</sup> This witling is so dull that in the very matter in which everyone laughs at his folly he still thinks he is carrying off a very witty jest.	25
Where are you, <sup>164</sup> Lord Henry? he says. Bring out your illustrious book against Luther. What does your lordship defend? The seven sacraments? By whose teachings? God's or men's? Let your Thomistic lordship hear then the judgment, not of Luther, but of Him before whom the poles of the earth tremble: "In vain do they worship me with the teachings of men."	30 35
Have you ever seen a blind man, reader, who when provoked was	55

Have you ever seen a blind man, reader, who when provoked was eager to avenge himself with his fists? In order to know where to

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>162</sup> With what restraint this pious priest always speaks
<sup>163</sup> A camel dancer, indeed!
<sup>164</sup> Luther's words. This is your style, honored brother

direct his blow he gets his opponent to say something; on hearing him he immediately goes after him with a rain of blows, unless the other retreats too quickly for the blind man to be able to reach him. It seems to me that Luther acts the part of this blind man, but in such a way that no one has ever acted more ridiculously. For when the king on being called by name answers him on the right, Luther strikes out in return with	5
a blow toward the left. <sup>165</sup> And so, observe, please, how wittily Luther plays out this play. Imagine now that you	
see the fellow, his eyes blinded, standing determined to deliver a box	10
on the ear.	10
"Where are you, Lord Henry?" he says.	
"Here, next to you."	
He invites him to approach still closer, so that of course he may	
strike more surely. "Bring forward," he says, "your illustrious book	15
against Luther."	
"Here it is." "Come still closer. What does your lordship defend? The seven	
sacraments?"	
"I do."	20
"Stand closer yet. By whose teachings? God's or men's?" "God's."	_0
Now, clearly certain of hitting his mark, see how accurately he	
delivers his blow. "Listen, then, your lordship: 'In vain do they	
worship me with the teachings of men." Friends, would you be able	25
to restrain your laughter if you were admitted to such a sight, you	
who see this blind man, unaware of how far he has shifted in the	
opposite direction, so exult for joy that he is beside himself, as though	
he has cracked a mighty box on the ear of his opponent?	
Now let your lordship go, <sup>166</sup> he says, and	30
teach their papal lordships this fruitless	
faith and religion, and defend it vigorously, as he best knows how. But	
let your lordship keep his filthy and sacri-	
legious mouth away from the church of	
God, which admits nothing but the word	35
of God. <sup>167</sup>	

On the contrary, Reverend Father Tosspot, let your lordship go, and to your sister ladyships, to whom, you preach, men must confess

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>165</sup> Luther is even blinder than the blind<sup>166</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>167</sup> See that you keep your impious mouth from the faith of Christ

their sins, preach your faithless faith and	
the religion of the Bohemian back country, <sup>168</sup>	
where matrimony means nothing but to	
increase and multiply and to mate in church like a pack of dogs.	
This is the church for whose favor your paternity, who is exiled far	5
from the favor of Christ, denies that matrimony is a sacrament and	
takes away from it absolutely all grace. This church your paternity	
points out as the church of God, and with that filthy and sacrilegious	
mouth blasphemes the true church of Christ, and with lips polluted	
by lying defiles the word of God, and against those whom Christ did	10
not have in mind you hurl, like a lightning flash and thunderbolts,	
the words of Christ: "In vain do they worship me with the doctrines	
of men." You flash and thunder with fictitious flashes and thunders	
against the king just as Cacus once did with a similar stratagem	
against Hercules. And so, after reverently	15
laying aside the thunderbolt of God, your	
lordship, who, like the giant Cacus, has	
blasted out a fictitious flash of lightning,	
will indeed merit that, as you extend your filthy mouth wide open to	
flash forth lightning, some Cacus should crap into it.169	20
He wittily refutes Luther's silly premise attacking	
the long duration of the catholic faith by referring	
to the equally long duration of the super-	
stition of the Jews, Turks, and heathens.	
Chapter 13.	25
But after he has thus flashed lightning by means of scriptural texts, he	
immediately gives battle with a reasoning no less flashing. For he	
says:	
Finally 170 this proposition of the king is so	
Finally, <sup>170</sup> this proposition of the king is so foolish that it contradicts even the com-	30
	30
mon sense of men. Who would not laugh to see that such great Sampsons	
bring forward no argument in defense of our Christian faith but	
duration in time and the usage of many men? <sup>171</sup> By what reasoning will	
we prove that the faith of the Turks is	25
erroneous, which has lasted now for	35
almost a thousand years, having arisen	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>168</sup> For whose favor Luther denies the sacrament of matrimony
<sup>169</sup> Why is it necessary for some cacodaemon to have shit out such abuse
<sup>170</sup> Luther's words
<sup>171</sup> You have lied directly against your own head

before Germany was converted to the faith? Or is it enough that while, separated by distances of space, we are not forced to dispute with them, we may meanwhile utter in our corners whatever nonsense we think right? Likewise, who would not justly vindicate the Jews by the example of this invincible Thomist, since they surpass us by such a 5 length of time? And why should not the heathens throughout the world, on the authority of King Henry of England, be said to have justly persecuted the new faith of Christ, since their idolatry, according to this very neat and very Thomistic argument, should have been judged the right and sound faith, because it was confirmed by so many 10 thousands of years within the territories of so many peoples by such constant use? And with the same Henry as our teacher let us even now declare that the errors of irreligious men are sound faith, because from the beginning of the world their numbers and duration and power have surpassed the scarcity and obscurity of religious men. In 15 sum, if the words of men have the force of articles of faith, why do not my words also make articles of faith?172 Am I not a man? Nay more, according to the new wisdom of the king, all of us men are forced to believe the words of everyone. Let even the king himself, that 20 he may be relieved of the trouble of writing, follow his own first premise, and say: I am a man who speaks thus; therefore it must be so; it cannot be otherwise.173 Foolish, ridiculous, and most truly Henrician and Thomistic are these words; as if a 25 spiritual matter is to be measured by prescriptions of time and usage or the law of men, like an estate or some plot of land. Behold, reader, the irrefutable reasoning, tinselled with what pompous words, with what Phormian assurance! And the sum of it 30 is: The public faith of the Turks lasting through several ages and of the heathens lasting through several thousands of years is erroneous, as well as that of the Jews; therefore, the

223

35

40

public faith of the catholic church, maintained through however many ages, can be erroneous.<sup>174</sup> Oh, the keenness of it, deserving the applause of Jews, Turks, and heathens; but any Christian sees it is duller than a pestle. For, since the superstition of infidels is governed by the devil, and the faith of the catholic church by God, this is an amazing line of argument for the reverend father to take: the faith of a people

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>172</sup> Because you have deservedly lost all reason to be trusted

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>173</sup> Do you believe that you are not detected when you blather so against your own fictions?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>174</sup> You recognize his form of disputing, Father Subtle

governed by a lying spirit can be false; therefore also the faith of a people governed by the Spirit of truth can be false. Such is this reasoning and so bold an Achilles that I dare not engage in conflict with it. By this reasoning all the defenders of the church clearly lie prostrate. Yet that reasoning which Luther subjoins and argues by analogy is still more feeble, when he makes his inference by asking the following: "If the words of a man have the force of the articles of faith, why do not my words also make	5
articles of faith? Am I not a man?" <sup>175</sup> To this argument at least one can answer that the reverend father is not a man, because no ass is a man; since that man is truly an ass who still does not understand that what is said by men who speak on their own authority, or, as he does, who speak on the authority of the	10
devil, is one thing; what is spoken by the church of Christ who speaks on the authority of the Holy Spirit is another thing. Christ said: "It is not you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you." Otherwise, because Paul was a man, then—if Luther were not an ass— you see that it clearly follows from Luther's asinine assumption that	15
the word of Luther would be of equal authority with the word of Paul. In this passage, however, he has nevertheless turned aside from his accustomed manner. For he has been accustomed to conceal wholly whatever can be objected and to pass it over in silence. But here, confident of himself, he has dared to recall something which	20
seemed an obstacle to him. You easily see that he would never have been ready to do this had he not had a trick at hand by which he could immediately remove that obstacle. Let us hear, then, what he says.	25
If <sup>176</sup> they say that their own precept differs from that of others in that the precept of the papists is from the Holy Spirit, that of the others from men, the Turk will laugh at them.	30
We whom you call papists, Luther, clearly do say this, but we say that the faith of the church is from the Holy Spirit, that of the Turks not from men but from the devil; now what do you answer to this? He says that the Turk will laugh at this. <sup>177</sup> Really? And you, pious father, do you consider ridiculous whatever the Turk ridicules? So well does a thing suit your faith when it suits the faith	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>175</sup> Hardly; or at least a worthless one
<sup>176</sup> Luther's words
<sup>177</sup> The Turk is the judge of faith for Luther

of a Turk! What a Christian heart, that approves nothing but what the Turk approves along with you! Now I see why you deride the sacraments; it is, of course, so that you may not seem so silly to the Turk. You wish the bread and wine to remain in the eucharist lest	
the Turk mock you. <sup>178</sup> By the same reason-	5
ing, you will very shortly deny altogether	-
that the body and the blood are present because otherwise it is	
certain that you cannot satisfactorily justify your faith to the Turks.	
Now you see in full measure, reader, the faith and religious spirit	
of the reverend father, since you see according to what norm he	10
constructs his articles of faith; now see his wisdom, clearly equal to	
this religious spirit of his.	
The Turk, <sup>179</sup> he says, will say to you: When	
you assert this without scriptures and without signs, on more human authority, you offect pathing	15
without signs, on mere human authority, you effect nothing more than if I said that my faith also is from God. I contemn your	15
faith with the same facility with which	
you contemn mine; and I prove my faith	
with the same authority with which you	
prove yours. <sup>180</sup> What will happen here, he says, except that even fools	20
will understand that the Henrician Thomists in their infamous	
ignorance have exposed our faith to ridicule and have fortified the	
impiety of all the heathens; they deserve	
to have their mouth, tongue, and hands	
cut off to prevent their ever saying or	25
writing anything. <sup>181</sup>	
Did I not say that the genius of this fellow is utterly divine, since	
he saw what the Turk would say against those who would set forth	
the faith of the church without scriptures? If anyone should cite any	20
text from the scriptures, then the reverend	30
father easily sees that the Turk will have	
nothing to mutter against it. <sup>182</sup> The Turk, of	
course, has always been thus accustomed to believe the scriptures of	
the Christians, especially if anyone cites them as appropriately as this	35
reverend father is accustomed to do. For, although to a person citing	55
a custom of ours, the Turk would not hesitate to cite a custom of his own, nevertheless to a person citing our scriptures he would never, of	
course, dare to cite his own scriptures, and to oppose the Alcoran to	
the gospel, not because he does not prefer the Alcoran of Mahomet to	
the gooper, not because he does not prefer the rheoran of manomet to	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>178</sup> Not unlikely, indeed <sup>179</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>180</sup> As if he actually agreed with the scriptures
<sup>181</sup> You certainly deserve to have both your tongue cut out and your teeth knocked out
<sup>182</sup> Oh, the shrewdness of the venerable father!

the gospel of John, which he says has been corrupted by us, but lest he	
embarrass the reverend father, a fellow from among the papists who	
agrees with his own faith; a fellow so dull-witted, and an ass more	
asinine than asininity itself, that he believed the Turk was ready to	
believe the scriptures of the Christians. Now the reverend father,	5
zealous for the faith, declares that those who write anything the	
Turks will deride deserve to have their mouth, tongue and hands cut	
off to prevent their ever saying or writing anything. Who would not	
rather think this fellow deserving that his golden mouth and honey-	
smooth tongue, <sup>183</sup> a very domicile of per-	10
suasion, should never grow quiet and that	
his gesturing hand should be adorned with golden rings, so that he	
may always be either saying or writing something such as may cheer	
up wretched mortals in the midst of their tribulations and labors and	
relax them with laughter; if only his impiety were as absent on any	15
point as his folly is present at every point.	
But yet, I wonder how it came about that at this point a man gentle	
and mild by nature should in this passage, contrary to his custom,	
burn with such merciless anger as to wish to cut off the mouth, tongue	
and hands of all the faithful who may say or write anything which the	20
infidels would mock as foolish. Meanwhile	
he has not considered the tongue and fin-	
gers of the apostle Paul, <sup>184</sup> who confesses that	
he not only preaches the kind of thing which seems foolish to the gen-	
tiles but even that he preaches nothing else. "We," he says, "preach	25
nothing else but Jesus Christ, to the Jews indeed a stumbling block,	
but to the gentiles foolishness." But as for what follows in Luther,	
you could hardly tell whether it shows more of folly, or of impiety.	
5 5 15	
But, <sup>185</sup> he says, a restless Satan does this in	
order to call us away from the scriptures	30
through criminal Henries and sacrilegious Thomists and to found	
our faith on the lies of men. For there is now no need of	
holy scripture if the novel sayings of men	
are a sufficient argument apart from	
scripture. <sup>186</sup>	35
Do you think it is shrowdness reader that Lyther has detected the	

Do you think it is shrewdness, reader, that Luther has detected the design of Satan? He is too stupid to do such a thing. No, the devil himself has told him this. For John was no more intimate with Christ

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>183</sup> Eulogy of the venerable father<sup>184</sup> How little foresight you show at any point, honored brother!

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>185</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>186</sup> Satan has been doing this in you for a long time

as His evangelist than Luther is interior to Satan as his very own cacangelist; <sup>187</sup> not only at one meal, but day and night he reposes on the bosom of the devil; or rather, the devil does not recline upon him but is stuck fast	_
in his very bosom. Otherwise he could not have declared with so much authority that the catholic faith concerning the sacraments is founded on the lies of men, although he has already succeeded in proving that it cannot be founded on the Holy Spirit except insofar as this may be proved by evident scriptures, lest, of course, the Turk,	5
who admits nothing apart from our scriptures, will not approve it. But when the scripture of the Christians is cited, the Turk immediately senses himself overcome and admits it. If you do not believe Luther in this matter, he will be ready to swear that any one of the Turks believes and venerates all the sacraments of the Christians, all the	10
articles of Christian faith insofar as they can be proved by the testimonies of Christian scripture, no less than Luther himself believes and venerates them. I certainly do not believe that anyone is so incredulous as to be unready to believe this not only on the oath of Luther, but even	15
without his oath. <sup>188</sup> But without the scriptures neither does the Turk believe anything, nor does Luther; so prettily do they agree with one another. To support this point he gives the following reason as his defense: that there would be no need of sacred scripture now if the novel statements of men are a sufficient argument apart from	20
scripture. At this point the reverend father forces me to doubt whether any Turk is ever so foolish as to deign, especially in this matter, to be an ally of the Lutheran folly, not perceiving the nature of the following inference: the church of Christ, governed by the Spirit of Christ, with	25
a certain faith passed on to her, preserves the sacraments of Christ; therefore the church of Christ has no need of the scriptures. If Luther had lived at the time of the evangelists he would have deterred them by this reasoning from writing the gospels. For if those things, which men at that time heard from men, were believed to be	30
handed down from God to those who related them, and thus created faith in those who heard, what need was there for the evangelists to include any of those things in writing? Was it, indeed, either because Christ, who was working this faith in His church, would some day utterly abandon the church, or because He could not preserve	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>187</sup> Luther a cacangelist<sup>188</sup> That is not difficult

without writing the faith He had wrought without writing, although before He Himself was born He had promised that He would write the law in men's hearts, and when He was born in the flesh He prom- ised that He would be with the church even to the consummation of the world? I do not think the evangelists would have been so deterred by such reasoning that they would have been ready to desist from writing the gospels. On the contrary, they would have answered among many other things perhaps also this: that Christ would indeed never abandon His church with whom He	5
Himself promised that He would remain	10
even until the end of the world; <sup>189</sup> that the	
Spirit, the Paraclete, who leads the church into all truth would never	
fail her; that thus, even if the evangelists never wrote a letter, the true	
sacraments and true articles of the faith would never be lost to the	
catholic church at any time, nor would error arise in matters of such	15
necessity—a thing which would distract the hope and faith of the	
bride to empty appearances and turn her away from her spouse-	
that nonetheless the evangelists would not write in vain even though	
they should leave out all the articles and sacraments of faith which	•
God both had caused to be taught and wished to preserve without	20
writing; they would include the life of Christ and some part of His	
miracles, and some truths from among the many which Christ taught,	
for the sake of forming in His flock morals and virtues worthy of the	
Christian heart.	
Finally, what sort of impudence leads him to call the sacraments	25
of the church the novel sayings of men, since, except for Luther, no	
one doubts that the sacraments are more ancient than the books of	
the gospels themselves? Thus he has called the sacrament of orders	
something new. He said that it is a new thing that bread is believed	20
turned into the flesh and wine into the blood; and he says that this	30
teaching has arisen within the past three hundred years; although the	
king has most skillfully refuted the fellow's shamelessness by the	

testimonies of most ancient fathers, on both these points and no less

so on all the other sacraments.

<sup>233</sup> 

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>189</sup> The utterly certain promise of Christ

He again shows how senselessly Luther distorts the scriptures, with which he tries to prove that nothing is to be believed with certainty which cannot be proved by a clear scriptural text. Chapter 14.	5
But now he turns back again to the scrip- tures and with a new formula, his foul mouth full of abuse, farts anathema and a curse if anyone should lay any other foundation than that which has been laid. <sup>190</sup> As if anyone would do that except himself, who, having laid his own foundation, is trying to overthrow the Christian faith from its foundation, which is Christ. But come, let us see the nature of his foundation and bow aptly he fits it to his building.	10
Paul, <sup>191</sup> he says, in I Cor. 2, with great auth- ority ordained that our faith ought to rely on the words of God, when he says: "My discourse and my preach- ing have not been in the persuasive words of human wisdom but in the manifestation of the spirit and power, so that your faith may not be in the wisdom of men but in the power of God."	15
Who has ever heard a fool present anything so irrelevant, so beside the point? He thus thinks it enough to say whatever comes into his mouth; the only thing he avoids is silence. Declaring that he will prove that nothing possesses certain authority except the scriptures, he brings forward the following text of the apostle: "No one can lay	20
any other foundation but that which has been laid." As if that foundation which has been laid were the scripture and not what the apostle himself immediately adds: "Jesus Christ. <sup>192</sup> " And then, with his anathemas and curses, having failed to mention Christ,	25
he tries to force us to believe that the foundation referred to is scripture, not Christ; or that scripture is the same thing as Christ, as if a book written about Caesar is the same thing as Caesar. Then, although no one denies that we must rely on the words of God—but we say that of these words some have been written, some, of equal	30
authority, not written, and both kinds must be believed with equal faith; of these he silently contemns the one, the other he contemns	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>190</sup> They are Luther's most frequent arguments
<sup>191</sup> Luther's words
<sup>192</sup> How singularly Luther understands the words of Paul

openly—he brings forward, as though it were a great argument to support the word of God, those words of Paul, which say not even one word about the word of God but about the manifestation of the spirit and power of God. And then, as though the engagement had been carried off vigorously, he heaps abuse on the king because, so he says, the latter pours forth the persuasive words of human wisdom. As if he himself is becoming known to the whole world by means of miracles. Whether he has proved his preaching to the Bohemians by miracles I have not yet heard; but no one can impute to him, so far as I know, the persuasive words of human wisdom; no fool is farther removed from them; the farther he proceeds, the clearer he makes this fact.	5 10
Accordingly, <sup>193</sup> he says, we adhere to the defender of our church, who says, in Mat-	
thew 16, "I will build my church," not on length of time nor on the multitude of men, nor on, "It must be so," nor on usage, or the word of the saints; nor finally on John the Baptist, nor on Elias, nor on	15
Jeremiah or any of the prophets, but on a sole and solid rock, on Christ, the Son of God. This is the defense of our faith, here we are	
safe against the gates of hell. He cannot	20
lie and deceive. <sup>194</sup> "All men are liars." And	
the saints, when they act or speak apart from this rock, are men. The	
absolutely pure and single and certain word of God must be the	
support of our faith. "If anyone speaks," he says, "let it be as with the words of God," and, "Let all prophecy be according to the proportion	25
of faith." Romans, 12.	23
Please observe, even from this passage, reader, where the impious	
fellow is guiding the argument, intending to prove that nothing must	
be believed except a clear scriptural text. He alleges that the faith of	20
the church is built on Christ alone, and from this he concludes that	30
the word of Christ alone must be believed. And he clearly praises the interpretation of anyone who understands him to mean that nothing is	
to be believed except what sacred scripture includes, because no other	
word which may be spoken by God is certain. For he does away with	
faith not only in the custom of the church	35
and in all the ancient fathers, but also, by	
name, in John the Baptist, Elias, Jeremiah, and all the other prophets,	
and as a consequence of his reasoning, absolutely all the apostles. <sup>195</sup> He	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>193</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>194</sup> Why then do you do both?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>195</sup> Luther's impious arrogance

is worse by a long shot than the heretic Faustus who, <sup>196</sup> from Christ's words that all those who preceded Him are thieves and robbers, considered Moses and the prophets as malefactors. This fellow, however, abolishes faith and leaves no certainty in any one at all of the leaders of the old law and the gospel, unless perhaps what one reads that Christ Him- self has said, and this with so clear a meaning that there can be no	5
controversy about His words. He rejects all other men as doubtful, both because they could have lied, since they were men, and because he thinks it uncertain whether, when they were setting down their writings, they stood on the rock or off the rock. You see, then, reader, the supreme impiety of the man who, when he knows that his heresies have clearly been condemned by the	10
testimony of all holy men, does nothing else but abolish in turn the authority of all holy men, deferring for a little while to Christ, until his iniquity shall reach full growth; then he will un-	15
doubtedly be ready to dishonor Christ's majesty directly, which in the meantime also he attacks indirectly. <sup>197</sup> For, if every man is thus a liar, and if it is so uncertain whether, when holy men have spoken or written, they did it while standing on the rock of faith, that even Elias is a doubtful author, and Jeremiah, and John the Baptist, it certainly will follow that John the Evangelist likewise is a doubtful	20
<ul> <li>author. For both he and they spoke by exactly the same Spirit.</li> <li>But now observe, on the other hand, the amazing folly of Luther.</li> <li>For, after he has proved what no one has ever denied: that Christ</li> <li>founded His church on a rock-from which rock, as everyone knows,</li> <li>Luther has fallen into the abyss<sup>198</sup>—then</li> </ul>	25
again, from the fact that Christ alone is the foundation, he proves that scripture alone is the foundation, as if the only begotten Word of God is just any word written down in the sacred writings, must we not conclude that this fellow has either no shame or no brain? And yet, after concluding	30
that clause with Paul's words: "If anyone speaks, let it be as with the words of God," and likewise with the words: "Let all prophecy be in proportion to faith," neither of which texts is at all relevant to the statement to which he joins them both, then, as if the battle line had been destroyed, he trumpets his own victory. <sup>199</sup>	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>196</sup> The error of Faustus
<sup>197</sup> Where Luther seems to be heading
<sup>198</sup> Rather, he has deliberately leaped off of it
<sup>199</sup> A fellow greedy for victory

These are our defenses, <sup>200</sup> he says, against which they are forced to fall silent, the Henries, Thomists, papists, every kind of scum, sludge, and privy of such impious and sacrilegious men; and they have nothing to answer here, but they lie confused and prostrate in the face of those thunder- ing words; and we await also what the king, this vendor of women's wares, to- gether with all his sophists, will dare to mutter against these arguments. <sup>201</sup> For the	5
judgment stands fixed, that faith is not owed except to the certain word of God, as Romans 10 says: "Faith depends on hearing, but hearing on the word of Christ"; accordingly, whatever is brought forward in addition to the word of God, let it be a matter of choice for us as masters, to believe, not to believe, to condemn, to approve, as it is written: "All things are yours, whether Apollo, or Cephas, or Paul, but you are Christ's."	10 15
Let us consider, reader, where all this lightning and thunder of Luther is tending. "Christ has built His church upon Himself"; "If anyone speaks, let it be as with the words of God"; "Let all prophecy be according to the proportion of faith"; "Faith depends on hearing, but hearing on the word of Christ." What have you finally accomplished by all these quotations, Luther? "I have accomplished this," he says, "that the judgment stands fixed that faith	20
is not owed except to the certain word of God, <sup>202</sup> and accordingly, whatever is brought forward in addition to the word of God, let it be a matter of choice for us as masters to believe, not to believe, to condemn, to approve."	25
See now how excellent a lightning flasher and thunderer you are; if anyone should grant you all these arguments, your lightning and thunder would still touch no one at all but yourself. But you it would blast through as completely as through Semele with an unexpected blaze. The king, if you can remember <sup>203</sup> —for	30
no wolf is more forgetful (if you do forget as often as you fail to answer anything at all to those arguments which particularly nettle you)—has proved that the word of God is in one case written, in the other unwritten, but that certain things were either handed down by the apostles, or divinely spoken by Christ to His church, and that thus many details	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>200</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>201</sup> But you are the sower of great crimes, to say nothing of trifles
<sup>202</sup> And who will be the judge as to which is that word: Luther, or the catholic church?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>203</sup> Recall this to mind, good Father

have been included in writing and many have not as yet been included in any writing; <sup>204</sup> that the seven sacraments and the rest of the articles of faith are supported partly by the written, partly by the unwritten word,	_
but still by the word of God; that both words are equally true, equally certain, equally venerable. If these statements are true, then, even if it were granted (though, in fact, it is not granted) that all other points were a matter of your own free choice and that, like a king and master, you had the supreme right to decide what to believe and	5
what not to believe, what to condemn and what to approve— nevertheless, you would have all this time accomplished absolutely nothing in regard to the sacraments and the articles of public faith; unless everything that I have said, or at least some part of it, be false. Will you then deny that one word of God	10
is written, one unwritten; <sup>205</sup> and will you argue, in opposition to the evangelist, that everything has been written; will you argue that nothing has been omitted, at least of the necessary articles, although you see that the principal evangelist omitted the principal sacrament, although you	15
hear that Paul delivered very many teachings without writing, al- though the apostle James proclaims: "Receive the engrafted word of God which is able to save your souls," although the scripture testifies: "His anointing shall teach you"? Will you deny that both the written and the unwritten word are equally true, although both are of God?	20
But of course you will deny that the word of God which is unwritten can be known for certain or recognized by anyone. Yet you yourself have already long ago admitted that God has given the church the power to distinguish the word of God from the words of men. There- fore, since the words of God are of both kinds, that is, both written	25
and unwritten, the church can, according to you, also distinguish within either kind the words of God from the words of men. There- fore, also according to you, the unwritten word of God is distinguished from the words of men. <sup>206</sup> There is no reason why the	30
church of Christ today can be more certain as to why the gospel of John written long ago is that of John than as to why any particular sacrament has grace from the unwritten word of God; but if you should deny that the catholic church which you call papistic has this power, then, since you do admit that some church has	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>204</sup> Pay attention, reader
<sup>205</sup> Why not, since he has already contemned the apostle?
<sup>206</sup> The word of God is distinguished by the church even by Luther's admission

it, bring forward some church besides this one that you call papistic which has distinguished the unwritten words of God from the words of men. Or rather, bring forward some church besides this one which has distinguished for you—I do not say for your ancestors, but for	
you—the written words of God from the written words of men. But, in order not to render you worse <sup>207</sup> by pressing you too hard with your own words and force you to retract, as is your	5
constant custom, whatever good you have said, I pass over what you have conceded; I ask: What do you say to the fact that when Peter had confessed in the name of the church that Jesus is the Christ and the Son of the living God, he immediately heard from the Lord: "Blessed are thou, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood has not	10
revealed this to thee, but my Father in heaven"? Come, Luther, this word which Peter confessed: from what evident scriptures did he learn it, <sup>208</sup> since no scripture could have	15
taught it to the Jews very evidently, nor	
had Peter, an ignorant fisherman, had any but the slightest education, for Christ says that he had certainly learned that which he confessed not from a word written exteriorly but from the Spirit of the Father pouring Himself out interiorly? Was he therefore uncertain that this was the word of God because he felt it, did not read it, because he heard it interiorly, not exteriorly?	20
As for your citing, "Therefore faith is dependent on hearing," I ask you whether or not Peter heard interiorly what God spoke interiorly? Or is something heard only when it is written? Or, before the gospels were written, did the Christians not hear the apostles? Now see, trifle-trafficking Luther, how unnecessary it is for anyone	25
to answer these brilliant arguments of yours which, without any disadvantage to our cause, without any advantage to yours, may be granted collectively. Are you such a fierce debater, Luther? Are you such a great lightning-flasher; do you thunder with such frightful thunders? Let lightning and thunder,	30
therefore, be taken out of your sacrilegious mouth and put back into their own divine place. <sup>209</sup> Then it will be proper not merely to piss into that most filthy mouth. Even the following passage shows the degree of madness with which that mouth rushes headlong.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>207</sup> It is hardly possible for him to turn out worse
<sup>208</sup> But Luther needs evident scripture, as one to whom God has denied His Spirit
<sup>209</sup> He had diabolical, not divine, thunder

It is written, <sup>210</sup> he says, "that all things are yours, whether Apollo, or Cephas, or Paul, but you are Christ's." If we are Christ's alone, who is the dull- witted king who strives by his lies to make us the pope's? <sup>211</sup> We are not the pope's, but the pope is ours. It is not right to be judged by him but to judge him. For "the spiritual man is judged by no man and he himself judges all men," because it is true that, "All things are yours," even the pope; how much more these riffraff and good-for-nothing rascals, the Thomists and Henries.	5 10
Confound it if frenzy itself is as frenetic or raving madness itself is as raving mad as is this witty little noggin of Luther's. "The pope is ours," he says; "therefore it is our right, not to be judged by him, but to judge him." By the same reasoning: <sup>212</sup> a physician is ours, therefore it is our right, not to be cured by him, but to cure him; and a teacher belongs to his students, therefore it is their right, not to study from him, but to teach him.	15
Now as for his statement that it is our right not to be judged by the pope but to judge him, what does he mean by the words, "It is our right"? Is he speaking of all men taken together? Or of individuals? If he says, "of all taken together," he says nothing in his own support, because the totality of the church is for the pope, against him; but it	20
helps him still less in the case of the sacraments, where both people and pope, present as well as past, are for the sacraments, against him. But if it is the right of individuals to judge concerning the pope, con- cerning the sacraments, concerning the true sense of holy scripture, then, since out of so many judges the judgment of Luther is almost	25
the only one on the one side, by what pre- rogative should the vote of this one man outweigh the votes of all the others? <sup>213</sup> "Be-	30
cause," he says, "the spiritual man is judged by no one and he himself judges all men, because it is true that all things are yours, even the pope." Does it not seem to you, reader, that you are listening to gibberish? Is Luther alone, then, spiritual; or is the pope alone not spiritual; so that either Luther can judge all men and be judged by absolutely no one, or the pope ought to be judged by all men and judge no one?	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>210</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>211</sup> On the contrary, you dull-witted friarlet, you lie against the king. You satanist and heretic!
<sup>212</sup> Another similar reasoning
<sup>213</sup> Rather he is condemned by the votes of everyone

Who will not be amused by the madness of a man raving so sweetly that he does not see that whatever he blathers against the pope he is also blathering against Peter himself and against Paul? "For all things," he says, "are yours"; he does not say, "the pope," but, "Apollo, Cephas, and Paul." For this reason, just as Luther says, "We are not the pope's, but the pope is ours; it is our right therefore not to be judged by the pope but to judge him, because the spiritual man judges all things and he is judged by no one"; so it is necessary for	5
him to say, "We are not Peter's or Paul's, but Peter and Paul are ours; it is therefore our right not to be judged by Peter and Paul but to judge Peter and Paul." <sup>214</sup> Indeed, he will rather say, not, "It is our right," but, "It is my right," because the spiritual man	10
judges all things and is judged by no one. Therefore Luther, a spiritual man, will judge according to this reasoning, not Thomists and Henries, but Peter and Paul and all the rest of the apostles. Go on now, reader, and deny that a single Minerva was born from the head of Jove, when you see the single head of this fellow bring forth so many frenzies.	15
Although I am foolish, <sup>215</sup> he says, and not very skilled, I who drill so often without effect into these hopelessly senseless brains, and keep chanting without result to these deaf blockheads: "The traditions of men or long usage has no validity in matters of faith."	20
You certainly are foolish enough, as you say, and not only un- skilled but also senseless, insane, hopelessly brainless, who like a cuckoo keep chanting without result the same trite song: "The traditions of men have no validity in matters of faith," since you are such a deaf blockhead <sup>216</sup> that you do not hear	25
what has been dinned into your ears a thousand times: that what you call the traditions of men are the traditions of God; nor do you answer anything at all to those argu- ments by which the arguments you state have been dissolved before they are stated.	30
How often, <sup>217</sup> he says, I have said that even in the opinion of Augustine honor is owed only to the canonical books, so that one may most firmly believe	35

only to the canonical books, so that one may most firmly believe

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>214</sup> Pray, tell then, Luther: How do you judge them?<sup>215</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>216</sup> Deaf Luther

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>217</sup> Luther's words

that there is no error in them, but that the rest, however much holiness and learning distinguish them, are not worthy of equal honor.	
On the matter of the long-lasting faith of the church, which he had said is of no validity, he does not present any proof; for sufficient argument against the words of Christ, "I am with you even to the end of the world," and likewise against the statement that the Spirit, the Paraclete, will lead the church into all truth, and against the fact that Christ prayed that the faith of the church would not fail; sufficient argument against all these texts,	5
I say, is the fact that the Turk would jeer at the men who would say such things. <sup>218</sup>	10
But, lest anyone be influenced at all by the authority of the holy fathers, he presents Augustine's statement that the other books outside the canonical scripture are not worthy of equal honor, no	
matter how much holiness and learning distinguish their authors. As if anyone would thus cite the saying of any saint as though it were sacred scripture. And yet I have no doubt that if this same Augustine had read anything in the works of all the holy fathers preceding him,	15
especially anything harmonizing with the faith of his own time, he would never have doubted that it was a true and undoubted article of Christian faith. For the writings of our predecessors represent to us the faith of	20
their own times. <sup>219</sup> Nor do we have any other way of speaking with the dead in order that we can know the content of their faith. Therefore, out of the books of those who have lived before us we find out that knowledge, and thus we discover that this faith which Luther attacks is not, as he falsely asserts, new or proper to any one nation, but that it is the public faith of the whole church	25
through many ages. That this church is true and unable to err and be deceived in a matter of such great importance was promised by Him who said: "The Paraclete, when He shall have come, shall lead you into all truth." But Luther, on the contrary, says: "Scripture demands that nothing be believed except itself alone." I ask you, Luther:	30
Where does scripture demand this? Cite the scriptural text through which the Holy Spirit forbids anyone to believe Him unless He is quoting scripture. When He descended upon the apostles, did He teach them nothing at all without scripture? <sup>220</sup> Did they	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>218</sup> What Luther opposes to the scriptures
<sup>219</sup> That the faith of the saints is gathered from their writings
<sup>220</sup> Luther does not believe even God without a written guarantee

<ul> <li>vainly to virtuous and faithful men; that is, as he calls them, to deaf</li> <li>asps who, he says, incessantly repeat and chatter their ditties:</li> <li>"Augustine or Jerome said so; Ambrose said so; therefore Luther is a heretic because the sayings of Augustine or Ambrose are articles of faith." I certainly admit that that inference has no validity; but I</li> <li>think the following is valid: "No one has ever said any such thing to</li> <li>Luther; therefore Luther is a shameless liar." But Luther himself</li> <li>cannot deny this one: "Luther denies that what the Holy Spirit has</li> <li>taught the church are articles of faith; therefore Luther is a heretic."</li> <li>Indeed,<sup>221</sup> and these Thomist swine, he</li> <li>says, are forced to grant that holy men</li> <li>have erred rather often, so that their</li> <li>authority cannot be enough, even by the</li> <li>judgment of common sense, for confirming faith and supporting conscience.</li> </ul>
heretic because the sayings of Augustine or Ambrose are articles of faith." I certainly admit that that inference has no validity; but I think the following is valid: "No one has ever said any such thing to10Luther; therefore Luther is a shameless liar." But Luther himself cannot deny this one: "Luther denies that what the Holy Spirit has taught the church are articles of faith; therefore Luther is a heretic."10Indeed, <sup>221</sup> and these Thomist swine, he says, are forced to grant that holy men have erred rather often, so that their authority cannot be enough, even by the judgment of common sense, for confirming faith and supporting15
think the following is valid: "No one has ever said any such thing to10Luther; therefore Luther is a shameless liar." But Luther himself10cannot deny this one: "Luther denies that what the Holy Spirit has10taught the church are articles of faith; therefore Luther is a heretic."10Indeed, <sup>221</sup> and these Thomist swine, he15have erred rather often, so that their15have erred rather often, so that their15judgment of common sense, for confirming faith and supporting10
cannot deny this one: "Luther denies that what the Holy Spirit has taught the church are articles of faith; therefore Luther is a heretic." Indeed, <sup>221</sup> and these Thomist swine, he says, are forced to grant that holy men 15 have erred rather often, so that their authority cannot be enough, even by the judgment of common sense, for confirming faith and supporting
taught the church are articles of faith; therefore Luther is a heretic."Indeed,221 and these Thomist swine, he says, are forced to grant that holy men15have erred rather often, so that their authority cannot be enough, even by the judgment of common sense, for confirming faith and supporting15
says, are forced to grant that holy men15have erred rather often, so that theirauthority cannot be enough, even by thejudgment of common sense, for confirming faith and supporting
have erred rather often, so that their authority cannot be enough, even by the judgment of common sense, for confirming faith and supporting
authority cannot be enough, even by the judgment of common sense, for confirming faith and supporting
judgment of common sense, for confirming faith and supporting
Ah! I have just finally caught on, idiot that I am, why Luther 20
arrogates so much to himself; why he wishes himself more than all the
holy fathers taken together to be believed concerning the meaning of
scripture and concerning faith. Now he has given the reason; namely,
that they have erred rather often; he <sup>222</sup> cannot err. 25
Therefore, if he, a single individual, drags into question any
matter on which everyone else agrees, the authority of all the others
does not suffice to support conscience. Why? Because there is not one
of the others who cannot err. But the authority of Luther suffices.
Why? Because he cannot err. As if some blind man were to say: 30
"There is hardly any person with sight who does not err at times on
the colors of things; I am unable to err; therefore, if a man does not
wish to be deceived about colors, let him distrust all other mortals
taken together, and let him believe me alone."
And this, he says, is my general response to those royal principles 35 of the Thomists. Let mad Orestes swear that this answer is that of a
madman.

------

 $<sup>^{221}</sup>$  Luther's words. With how much more reason do they say that you err?  $^{222}$  He, on the contrary, always errs

He takes up again certain absurd statements of Luther which the author initially proposed for discussion but has put off till this section. Chapter 15.	
Although I know, reader, that for a long while now you have been disgusted by the whole tenor of this general response, which you see is so stupid that you cannot but wonder what sort of ungoverned madness has governed the fellow, since he has not been ashamed to answer so senselessly with so much boasting, nevertheless I will ask	5
you to endure patiently a bit more boredom while you recall certain words from the beginning of that little book which I have put off till this point, lest he be able to pretend that I am imitating him and passing over in silence any argument he considers solid; or lest you, reader, should judge me either so forgetful as not to remember what I	10
promised at the beginning, or of such bad faith as not to want to fulfill what I have promised. <sup>223</sup> On the other hand, that the matter may hereafter be less disgusting to you, the folly of Luther, which displays his asinine ears at almost every syllable, will relieve	15
your boredom. This, then, is how he talks: The papists <sup>224</sup> cannot yet understand what the battle between me and them is all about. To no avail have I published so many books which openly	20
testify that I seek only that the divine writings alone may reign, as is fitting and just, but that human inventions and traditions should be abolished as most harmful stumbling blocks, or with their poison cut out and their sting removed; that is, with their power of forcing and commanding and ensnaring consciences snatched away, they should be tolerated as optional matters, neither good nor bad, like any other	25
pest or misfortune of the world. You hear nothing new here, reader, but the same thing that,	30
having been hammered away at ten times before in his general response, has been refuted and disproved ten times, as you have seen, so that there was not any need of repeating the same points again here, <sup>225</sup> only I wished	35
to warn you and to present for your	

 $<sup>^{223}</sup>$  The author now carries out his initial promise  $^{224}$  Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>225</sup> Keep in mind, reader, what he has said before

consideration the sort of things he calls inventions and traditions of men. For he himself mentions them a little later, when he says:

The other kind<sup>226</sup> consists of those things which are outside scripture, namely:

the papacy	the decrees of councils	5
doctors	indulgences	
purgatory	the mass	
universities	monastic vows	
falsely named bishops	the traditions of men	
the cult of the saints	new sacraments	10

And anything similar, that is, cockle sown by Satan, through the rule of his Roman idol, in the field of the Lord;<sup>227</sup> not only can the church very profitably do without them, but moreover she does not even endure unless she does without them, or uses them in accordance with free choice.

You have often heard, reader, that he considers as traditions of men everything that is not contained in evident scriptures. Now you see him bring forward, as though under the topic of example, not only the papacy or indulgences or all the vows of monks, by doing away 20 with which very things he would have showed that he was sacrilegious enough, but the decrees of councils, and holy doctors, and the sacraments, purgatory, the cult of the saints, and finally the mass itself, which he terms elsewhere a 25 sheer monstrosity, an idol, a spectre, a lie, and the very abomination itself standing in the holy place.<sup>228</sup> Therefore, unless all these things be at least optional and neither good nor bad, he thinks the church cannot even endure, but that, given this condition, the one as well as the other can endure, yet only as a man endures with a pest. There-30 fore, it would be much healthier that, like most harmful stumbling blocks, there should be abolished altogether the papacy, doctors, universities, bishops, councils, monks, the traditions of men, the veneration of saints, and the mass, the sacraments, all hope of forgiveness and fear of purgatory. For then at last 35 the church would be most fortunate,<sup>229</sup> if, with the papacy abolished together with the decrees of councils and monastic vows and all universities and

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>226</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>227</sup> Do you, pray tell, so clearly distinguish the cockle from the wheat?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>228</sup> Here you see, reader, what Luther considers the traditions of men

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>229</sup> On what condition Christians would seem fortunate to Luther

absolutely all doctors, the people would neither be ruled by laws nor obey rulers nor listen to doctors, but would be so free and unbridled, with the freedom of the gospel of course, that no one would be forced, nor commanded, nor counselled, nor taught anything, nor would anyone venerate the saints; and he would contemn the sacraments; but the mass, that is, the body of Christ offered with holy ceremonies, he would even abominate. That he can do this with more impunity, let him only believe that he does none of these things with a free will,	5
but let him impute all evil deeds to God; let him have firm faith in the promise of God, that no matter what he has done he will be saved	10
through baptism; if he believes this, he will be blessed and happy. <sup>230</sup> All fears and the	
inexorable fate he has cast under his feet, together with the roaring of	
Avernian Acheron. I am not at all surprised if he has no fear of	4 5
purgatory; there is indeed no reason for a person to be afraid of it who has had this sort of faith and lives in this manner.	15
who has had this sort of fault and lives in this manner.	
He refutes the slander of Luther, who lies in	
saying that the king has falsely charged him	
with the heresy that faith alone without works	
suffices for salvation. Chapter 16.	20
But I must not pass over at this point the fact that Luther slanders the prince, as if the latter imputes to him falsely the heresy that faith alone without works suffices for salvation. And this, he says, the king says of him falsely, although he himself says the same thing once again	0.5
in this same book in which he answers the king; in it his words are as follows:	25
These sacrilegious people <sup>231</sup> have one mad- ness: they wish to act before God by works and not by faith alone; the result is that it is necessary to deny Christ and to make faith in Him void.	30
What is clearer than these words? And although this scoundrel reiterates the same thing again, yet he does not hesitate—as if he had never said it but had always argued for the contrary opinion—to	

\_\_\_\_\_

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>230</sup> The Lutheran faith<sup>231</sup> Luther's words

attack the king with reproaches because the latter said that Luther had long ago said what he now says a second time.

This offspring of a viper, <sup>232</sup> he says, mani- fests his natural character and imitates the example of his parents. For thus even Paul, when he had taught that all the sons of Adam are justified by faith alone without works, had those, as he writes in Romans 3, "Who say that we teach: let us do evil so that good may come of it." But what judgment awaits them? <sup>233</sup> "The condemnation of such men," he says, "is just." What should I say to my royal basilisk about his lie except the same judgment of condemnation?	5 10
Who would not be clearly impious to condemn Luther, the com- rade of Paul, and to restrain his pen no differently than God re- strained the tongue of those men referred to? For he says again a little later:	15
The whole world knows <sup>234</sup> that I have al- ways taught and written consistently about faith, about charity, about works, although by reason of experience and study I advanced from day to day more and more, so that I have expressed the same ideas now one way, now another, at times more clearly, in some places more amply, in other places at greater length, and I have discussed the same ideas in various ways, even as the sacred writings also treat them.	20
Behold a most holy man, who delivers to us new sacred writings to which we owe such reverence that if he should clearly blaspheme God, we would take it patiently and in good part, certain that we are rather deceived and unable to grasp the meaning of so great a father than that a holy man and one who says he is certain that he has his	25
teaching from heaven judges erroneously; and so we would rather believe that the same thing is white and black at the same time than	30

God, we would take it patiently and in good part, certain that we are rather deceived and unable to grasp the meaning of so great a father than that a holy man and one who says he is certain that he has his teaching from heaven judges erroneously; and so we would rather believe that the same thing is white and black at the same time than that Saint Luther in any way contradicts himself. For if Paul cannot be charged with having misunderstood when, to prevent anyone's seizing the chance of misunderstanding him, he interprets himself, why should not Luther likewise be excused when, accused of misunderstanding, he repeats exactly the same opinion? And if we judge favorably of Paul, whose piety prevents us from doubting that in doubtful passages he undoubtedly understood rightly, why may not

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>232</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>233</sup> This will be your judgment, distorter of the scriptures

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>234</sup> Luther's words. Listen to this apostle, reader

Luther, whose impiety renders not only his ambiguous statements but even his well-expressed statements almost justly suspect, secure from us that we should interpret in good part whatever he has evidently written erroneously?	
How stupidly Luther wavers on the matter of works and faith, shamelessly pretending that the prince falsely misrepresents his words. Chapter 17.	5
Lest anyone can doubt what the fellow does think of works and faith, I will write below those words in which the most prudent prince excellently refuted this impiety of the rascal. "It is nothing new for this fellow, <sup>235</sup> Luther, to talk nonsense about known things as though they were new things. After he has described this	10
faith in many words, he then extols the riches of faith so that he may render us poor in good works, without which, as blessed James says, <sup>236</sup> faith is utterly dead. But Luther commends faith to us in such a way that he not only allows us a dispensation from good works but even suggests boldness in every sort of crime. For he says:	15
Now you see how rich is the Christian <sup>237</sup> or baptized man who, even though wish- ing to, cannot lose his salvation by any sins however great, unless he does not wish to believe. For no sins can damn him except lack of faith alone.	20
"O impious voice and teacher of all impiety, <sup>238</sup> so hateful in itself to pious ears that there is no need to refute it. Will not adultery, then, damn a man? Will not murder damn him? Not perjury? If only a person	25
believes he will be saved by virtue of the promise in baptism? "For he says this most clearly; nor do the words which he immedi- ately subjoins correct this opinion in any way at all; rather, they more truly exaggerate it, for he says:	30

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>235</sup> The king's words
<sup>236</sup> Saint James
<sup>237</sup> Luther's words. This is a new religion
<sup>238</sup> The king's words

If faith returns <sup>239</sup> or stands firmly by the divine promise made to the baptized, everything else is swallowed up in a moment by this same faith, indeed by the truth of God, because He cannot refuse Himself if you have acknowl- edged Him and faithfully clung to Him who gives the promise.	5
"What <sup>240</sup> else does he say in these words but what he has said before? Provided there be no lack of faith, all other crimes are swallowed up in a moment by faith alone, if you have acknowledged Christ and faithfully clung to His promise; that is, if you have firmly believed that you must be saved through faith, whatever you may have done. And, so that you may have less doubt about where he is heading:	10
Contrition, <sup>241</sup> he says, and confession of sins, as also satisfaction and all those exer- cises thought out by men will suddenly abandon you and render you more unhappy if you have wracked yourself on them, forgetting this divine truth. —which truth? Why, this truth that no sins can damn you except only lack of faith. <sup>242</sup>	15 20
"What Christian ears <sup>243</sup> will endure the pestilential hiss of this serpent, by which he extols baptism for no other end than that he may debase penance and set up the grace of baptism as a license for sinning with impunity?" You have heard, reader, what the prince imputes to him; or rather, what his own words impute to him and that so openly that not even yet has he found any excuse to set up in defense of it, and yet the shameless	25
fellow, as if he had heard nothing, says the very same thing again and at the same time, just as if he had never said it, com- plains that the statement is imputed to him. <sup>244</sup> But if he wished people to think that he was giving an opinion on	30
how necessarily good works follow from faith formed by charity—although that could not have been his opinion, <sup>245</sup> since he not only cries out so often that faith alone suffices but he even explicitly abolishes works as altogether useless and	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>239</sup> Luther's words. If this is so, why do we avoid wicked deeds?
<sup>240</sup> The king's words
<sup>241</sup> Luther's words
<sup>242</sup> Luther's words

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>242</sup> Why, then, are sins called mortal?
<sup>243</sup> The king's words
<sup>244</sup> This is characteristic of the fellow who is neither willing to speak nor able to keep silent
<sup>245</sup> Where will you flee, Luther?

clearly clamors that no sins, no crimes, however monstrous, can damn a Christian except lack of faith alone—then hear again what the prince says in order to leave no escape at all to the heretic. "Moreover <sup>246</sup> when he says that we do not	
satisfy God by works, but by faith alone, if he means, 'not by works alone without faith,' he is raving senselessly against the Roman See, in which no one has ever been so foolish as to say that works without faith satisfy. But if he considers works super- fluous and faith alone sufficient, no matter what sort the works may	5
be, then indeed he is saying something and is truly dissenting from the Roman See, <sup>247</sup> which believes Saint James that faith without works is dead. You see then how foolishly Luther gets himself all worked up when he so inveighs against the Roman See that meanwhile he entangles himself	10
in nets either of folly or of impiety. However, I certainly think it is nearer the truth that Luther thinks faith without good works is always sufficient for salvation. That he thinks this is clearly evident from many other passages as well as from the following in which he says:	15
God cares nothing for works nor does He require them. <sup>248</sup> But He does require that we consider Him true to His promises. "Luther himself <sup>249</sup> will have seen what he	20
meant by these words; I certainly believe that God cares both for our faith and for our works and that He requires neither our works nor our faith. For, though He does not require our good works, since He is God, yet He has care of everything that men do, since He forbids them to do one thing, commands	25
another, without whose care not even one sparrow falls to the earth, of which two are sold for two farthings." Behold, what have you ever read more clear, reader, than what the prince has quoted for you from Luther? Or what have you ever seen more pestilential? But if Luther should wish us to think he meant something different from what he	30
writes, why does he not even now interpret his words more sensibly? <sup>250</sup> If he does not think that we should sin, why does he promise impunity for sinning?	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>246</sup> The king's words
<sup>247</sup> This something is nothing
<sup>248</sup> Luther's words
<sup>249</sup> The king's words
<sup>250</sup> So that more people will follow him more readily

Why does he invite the whole world to security in sinning? If he should deny that his writings contain this meaning, behold, the prince has produced texts which are self-evident, and yet the prince makes them still clearer by interpretation. Luther shows that he has read these passages. If, then, the prince twists his words to another meaning than he should, why does he himself skip over such an important matter so timidly? Why does he not in turn show which words the king distorts, what he patches on through misrepresentation that Luther's own words do not contain? The slippery fellow would undoubtedly have done this, reader, if he had not seen himself hemmed in so narrowly that he had no-where to turn for escape.<sup>251</sup>

269

5

10

15

20

25

30

35

As for the fact that certain men try to defend him as though he does not think that just any works should be contemned, but only the works of the law; if he calls the law those precepts which were given to Moses on tablets, he sticks in the same mud. For without these works, faith does not suffice even now; unless he pretends that he is writing these things for children or fools whom ignorance excuses from fulfilling the precepts. But he could not have babbled these words about the ceremonies of the law, or as they call them the legal precepts, since he is not ignorant of the fact that no one is so foolish as to think he is at the present time bound by them. Although his promoters labor in vain to soften this stupid teaching by some gloss, the Ethiopian does not wish to be made white. What color of defense will this teaching take which not only argues that good works have no value but even that evil works, no matter of what kind, cause no harm.<sup>252</sup> No sins, he says, can damn the Christian except lack of faith alone. Surely, if Luther believed anything at all about Christ, he would never have dared to think such things. But he, clearly a pious fellow, wished to lead the world astray from reliance on good works to reliance on faith; as if the people were so constant in good works that there was thereby a danger that each one would think himself too much a little saint. In order to cure that evil, then, he orders that they should only believe Christ, that they will be saved through faith alone, and that they should altogether neglect, not only ceremonies, but even all good works whatsoever. Indeed, so that they may spend their time more pleasantly in the freedom of faith, they should realize that no crimes of any kind harm the man who believes. For no sins can damn

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>251</sup> Luther's last hiding places

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>252</sup> Make some defense, Quintilian

a Christian but lack of faith alone. O Satan, Satan, God has revealed to the king the subtleties which you plot through the mouth of Luther so that the liberty of the gospel may be nothing else but unbridled license by which the people of Christ may rush headlong to hell.	
He censures the wicked folly of Luther, who is of the opinion that all laws should be repealed. Chapter 18.	5
This extraordinary opinion, by which he would wish all human laws abolished, is like a kind of corollary of this heresy. Indeed, he already denies that any one of all those laws binds any Christian. For he writes thus in the <i>Babylonian Captivity</i> :	10
And so I say: <sup>253</sup> neither pope, nor bishop, nor any man has the right to impose a sin- gle syllable on a Christian man, unless this is done by the latter's consent. What- ever is done otherwise, is done in a tyrannical spirit. Therefore, prayers, fasting, donations, and in short whatever the pope has ordained and demanded in the whole body of his decrees, as numerous	15
as they are wicked, he has demanded and ordained with absolutely no right, and he sins against the liberty of the church as often as he attempts to decree any of these things.	20
This madness of the rascal the prince touches on in the following words: "But I am amazed <sup>254</sup> that the man has so	
little shame as to be able to think up such absurd things about laws; as if Christians could not sin, but that such a great multitude of believers were so perfect that nothing should be decreed, either for the worship of God or for the avoidance of crimes; but with the same stroke and with the same shrewdness he takes	25
away all the power and authority of princes and prelates. For what should a king or a prelate do if he can neither establish any law nor execute it once it has been established; but the people without law drifts to and fro like a ship without a rudder. What then becomes of the apostle's command: 'Let every creature be subject to higher	30

 $<sup>^{253}</sup>$  Luther's words. This would be very advantageous for your heresy  $^{254}$  The king's words

authorities'? What about the text: 'Obey your superiors, or the king as supreme,' and what follows? Why then does Paul say: 'The law is good'? And elsewhere: 'The law is the bond of perfection'? Further- more, why does Augustine say: 'Not without reason have there been instituted the power of the king, the right of the judge, the execu- tioner's instruments of torture, the arms of the soldier, the discipline of the ruler, and even the severity of a good father. All these things have their own bounds, their own causes,	5
reasons, usefulness; <sup>255</sup> and when these things	
are feared, the wicked are restrained,	10
and the good live in quiet among the	
wicked??	
"But I forbear to speak of kings lest I seem to plead my own cause.	
I ask this: If no one, whether man or angel, can lay down a law for	
the Christian man, why does the apostle lay down so many laws about	15
electing bishops, and about widows, and about women's veiling their	
heads? Why does he decree that the believing wife should not leave an	
unbelieving husband, unless she be de-	
serted by him? Why does he dare to say:	
'To the others I, not the Lord, say'? <sup>256</sup> Why	20
did he exercise such great power as to order the fornicator to be	
delivered over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh? Why did	
Peter strike down Ananias and Saphira with a like punishment	
because they had kept back for themselves a little of their own	
money? If the apostles were used to decreeing many things besides	25
the special precept of the Lord for the	
Christian people, <sup>257</sup> why may not those who	
have succeeded to the position of the	
apostles do the same thing for the welfare of the people? Ambrose,	
Bishop of Milan, a holy man, and not at all arrogant, did not hesitate	30
to command that throughout his diocese married couples should	
abstain from marital embraces during Lent; and is Luther indignant	
if the Roman pontiff, the successor of Peter, the vicar of Christ, to	
whom as to the chief of the apostles Christ is believed to have given	
the keys of the church so that by him others might enter and be	35
excluded, enjoins fasting and a few prayers? As for his persuading	
men that one must obey bodily but retain liberty of mind, who is so	
blind as not to see these tricks? Why does this simple and sancti-	
monious fellow carry both fire and water? Why does he order us, as	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>255</sup> True, but Luther would want these things abolished so that the wicked man may be without punishment
<sup>256</sup> Don't tell me you condemn him, Luther!
<sup>257</sup> These things you conceal, Luther

though in the words of the apostle, not to become slaves of men, not to be subject to the decrees of men, and yet order us to obey the unjust tyranny of a pontiff? Does the apostle preach in this manner: 'Kings have no right over you; you should put up with their unjust rule. Masters have no right over you; you should put up with their unjust slavery'? If Luther does not think the people should obey, why does he say that they must obey? If he thinks they should obey, why does he not himself obey? Why does the slippery fellow tride with each he	5
fellow trifle with such tricks? Why does he rise up with abusive language against a pontiff who he says must be obeyed? <sup>258</sup> Why does he stir up a tumult? Why does he arouse the people against one whose very tyranny, as he calls it, must	10
by his own admission be endured? Indeed, it is for no other reason, I think, than to procure for himself the favor of such wicked men as would desire impunity for their crimes and who would appoint as their chief him who already struggles for their liberty, and who	15
would divide the church of Christ, founded for so long upon a firm rock, and would erect a new church gathered together from wicked and criminal men, against which the prophet exclaimed: I have hated the church of the wicked and I will not sit down with the impious.'"	20
What does he answer to this? Exactly what he could; that is, absolutely nothing. What excuse can be given or contrived for an opinion so absurd? And yet this utterly stupid fellow is not ashamed to declare it so often with such great arrogance, as if to think other- wise would be a crime. But he thought he	25
had brilliantly handled this very silly opinion when he replied at Worms that the law of the gospel alone would ultimately be sufficient and human laws useless if magistrates were good and the faith truly preached. <sup>259</sup> As if even the best magistrates could manage either that the whole Christian people would want to live in common or that the wicked	30
would not want to steal or that any preaching of the faith could procure that no one anywhere would be wicked. If the law of the gospel does not permit stealing, surely the human law which punishes stealing is not useless; and the human law which alone apportions ownership of goods binds Christians; if this ownership is done away with, there cannot indeed be stealing. But if he should	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>258</sup> He does this so that he himself will not be forced to obey. The king hits the nail on the head <sup>259</sup> Luther stupidly handles a very stupid doctrine

say that from this premise the argument is drawn that we would do better to be without that law from which the ownership of goods arises and would do better to live in a certain natural community with the occasion of stealing eliminated, it does not help his case even	
if someone should grant him this argument. For even if we could live in common with far fewer laws, we still could not live altogether without laws. For the obligation to work would have to be pre-	5
scribed for certain classes, and laws would be needed to restrain crimes which would run riot even in that kind of life. But now if, with the faith preached most truly as the apostles used to preach it most truly, with, moreover, the best rulers everywhere put in charge of the Christian people, the ownership of property could yet remain, and	10
many wicked men would remain, he cannot deny that the human law binds Christians so that no one might steal what the law has appor- tioned to another, nor would the law be	15
useless in punishing anyone who committed theft. <sup>260</sup> As for his statement in the <i>Babylon</i> that good and prudent magis- trates will govern their charge better by the leading of nature than	
by laws, who does not see how absurd this is? Will the good magistrate be less just in establishing law than in con- ducting a court of justice, in which many	20
things can occur which may destroy the innocent? <sup>261</sup> To say nothing meantime of the fact that hardly any judgment is rendered justly which is not rendered according to some established law. For the law of the gospel does not apportion possessions, nor does reason alone prescribe the forms of determining property, unless reason is attended	25
by an agreement, and this a public agreement in the common form of mutual commerce, which agreement, either taking root in usage or expressed in writing, is public law. Therefore, if you take away the laws and leave everything free to the magistrates, either they will command nothing and they will forbid nothing, and then magistrates will be useless; or they will rule by the leading of their own nature	30
and imperiously prosecute anything they please, and then the people will in no way be freer, but, by reason of a condition of servitude, worse, when they will have to obey, not fixed and definite laws, but indefinite whims changing from day to day. And this is bound to happen even under the best magistrates, whom, although they may enjoin the best laws, nevertheless the people will oppose and murmur	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>260</sup> Answer, Luther<sup>261</sup> Conceal this, Luther

against as suspect, as though they govern everything, not according to what is just and fair, but according to caprice. But now, since Luther himself admits that no magistrates can be found anywhere who are not men; that is, of whom it is not very certain either to the citizens or to themselves what sort of men they will be within three days, how shrewdly does this wise man advise that laws be omitted and that all things be permitted to the magistrates, as though the people would thus live in liberty!	5
Now I ask you, what sort of statement is this which he makes: "Neither pope, nor bishop, nor any man has the right to impose a single syllable on a Christian man without the latter's consent"? I say nothing for the time being about the pope and about those to whom God has given power to impose many syllables by which they	10
may direct the people in the worship of God; let us consider civil laws. If no one has the power to establish a single syllable for the Christian man without his consent, then neither the king nor the whole people can establish any law which is valid against anyone who opposed it at the time it was proposed. Happy, <sup>262</sup> there-	15
fore, are the thieves and murderers, who will never be so insane as to agree on a law according to which they will pay penalties. Indeed, this farsighted father does not see that according to this	20
reasoning, <sup>263</sup> should everyone unanimously agree, yet the law can have force only until a new citizen is born or someone is enrolled as a citizen. But the fellow thinks that preaching the faith truly is nothing else than preaching it as he himself has often preached it already; namely, that faith alone suffices not only without good works but even with crimes of any kind, which, so he says,	25
can in no way damn any Christian, if only his faith stays firm or returns; <sup>264</sup> that is, of course, if even while he is committing the crime he yet believes that it cannot harm him because of his faith in the promise of God; or, if he has believed this less firmly while committing the crime and so because of his infirm	30
faith has committed the crime more timidly, let his faith at least return once the crime is carried through; let him not be sorry that he has committed it and torture himself by useless contrition. Surely, if the people had faith in the preaching of this Lutheran faith, they would very soon say truly that no laws obliged anyone, but the people without law would rush forth into every kind of crime.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>262</sup> O happy brigands!
<sup>263</sup> Luther's dull head
<sup>264</sup> What is clearer?

Now you see, reader,<sup>265</sup> how shrewdly the sagacious fellow strives to remove all human laws and with how much profit for the Christian people. You see, likewise, with how much reasoning, with what testimonies of scripture he has propped up his decree in opposition to the judgment of all learned men, in opposition to the judgment of all good men, in opposition to the public agreement of the whole world. You see how in that matter, in which hardly any reason could be strong enough, this sagacious fellow brings! forward no reason at all, no scriptural testimony; rather, he, who falsely imputes to others that they demand credence for themselves alone, himself demands credence for himself alone against the whole world, against clear reasons, against the testimonies of sacred scriptures, and this to the utter and inescapable destruction of all peoples. And this in human laws which truly are the traditions of men. For those items which are listed in his catalogue as traditions of men and are therefore, so he judges, to be tolerated like some pests or altogether abolished as most harmful stumbling blocks, have long ago been proved to be the traditions of God, partly contained in the scriptures themselves, partly handed on by the living word of God. And this has been proved by reason, by the scriptures, and by what is the strongest argument against Luther, the admission of Luther himself. Unless he either denies again his admission that the church has from God the power to distinguish the words of God from the words of men, or brings forward another catholic church by whose teaching he has known the gospel, or proves to us that the church has learned nothing without the scriptures, despite the evangelist's statement: "Not all things have been written in this book"; and likewise the apostle's words: "Hold on to what I have commanded you, whether by word of mouth or by letters"; likewise what was recalled by the same apostle: "I will give my laws into their hearts and in their minds I will write them"; and likewise those words of Christ: "The Spirit, the Paraclete, when He shall have come, will lead you into all truth"; or unless Luther proves to us that for so many ages in the times of the holy fathers Christ abandoned His church, and that the faith failed immediately after the apostles, contrary to the text which says: "Christ prayed that the faith of the

church would not fail," and as though truth itself were a liar like Luther when He said He would be with the church even to the consummation of the world; unless Luther overthrows for us all the 281

5

10

15

20

25

30

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>265</sup> Brief epilogue by the author

objections which the prince has brought up against him, all of which	
he so far conceals and dissimulates for no other reason than that he is	
aware that he has nothing at all to answer to any of all those argu-	
ments; unless, I say, Luther clearly does all these things, then I have	~
made most clear to you, reader—rather, I have clearly shown you	5
that the king has done so—that which I initially promised to show	
you: that this fellow not only abolishes the traditions of men, even	
those which he ought to obey, but that he abolishes even the tradi-	
tions of God, which the filthy mouth of this utterly insane rascal with	10
insolent blasphemy calls plagues and most harmful stumbling blocks.	10
He shows that Luther does only one thing:	
destroy the very scriptures for which he	
pretends to fight. Chapter 19.	
Now let us see whether he does not by every trick possible attack the	
very sacred scripture for which he pretends to fight. In the first place,	15
to say nothing of how he everywhere very wickedly, everywhere	
stupidly twists the scriptures to the defense of destructive teachings,	
what can more thoroughly or more clearly destroy the whole force	
and fruit of all the scriptures than the fact that this fellow strives	
hand and foot so that no one will believe any learned men at all	20
concerning the interpretation of scripture; so that no one will believe	
any of the holy fathers at all, or all men taken together at all; not	
believe the whole church at all, though it has been of one mind from the	
very origins of the church until this day; but that each one will oppose	
his own interpretation to everyone? What fruit will the scriptures	25
bring forth if anyone whatever claims such authority for himself that in	
understanding them he relies on his own interpretation in opposition	
to that of everyone else, so that he is influenced by no authority at all	
not to measure the scriptures according to feeling and fancy? Here he	
clearly opens the window by which the people may plunge into	30
perdition.	
Tell me, Luther, by your madness, if you had lived during that	
tempest in which the church was thrown into turmoil by Arian storms,	

would you have urged what you now urge: that anyone of the

common people who pleased might consider himself qualified to judge concerning that controversy, and that each one might rely on himself in understanding the scriptures which he read, and that he might make light of the judgment of the holy fathers who were present at the council sessions in which the heresies were condemned, so that, although you admit that Christ is present wherever two or three are gathered together in His name, you deny that He was present where there were gathered together in that same name six	5
hundred men, and those from every part of the Christian people? But who is so blind as not to see that in this matter you have no other intention <sup>266</sup>	10
than that, after abolishing completely the authority of public agreement, you may be able to stir up a tumult from the heedless disagreement of private individuals, in which case you may find some men foolish enough to think themselves free to rely with impunity on you, a single scoundrel, in opposition to the faith of everyone else?	15
Lest the authority of scripture might have any force against you, you work so that each person will drag into doubt the meaning of the sacred writings and defend	20
his own fancy not only against the judgment of all the holy fathers, against the universal judgment of the whole church, but even against the judgment of blessed Paul the apostle. <sup>267</sup> Perhaps, reader, you understand this to mean that Luther is	
showing boldness in not acknowledging Paul's judgment and in saying: <sup>268</sup> In this or that passage Paul does not mean what the church believes he means.	25
No, the case is far otherwise, reader, although not even that is to be endured; but this fellow does not fear, when Paul teaches that some text or other from sacred scripture refers to Christ, he does not fear, I say, to draw into doubt once more and to render questionable the judgment of the apostle and to say: Perhaps Paul did not say that from God but from his own understanding. So then, you rascal,	30
recognize the sacrilegious words with which in the <i>Babylonian Captivity</i> you, truly a captive in the service of demons, pervert the scriptures and blaspheme the apostle. For thus you blather:	35

Paul,<sup>269</sup> in Ephesians 5, either forcibly applies to Christ on his own initiative

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>266</sup> Luther's intention
<sup>267</sup> He does this so that he may more freely defend his own error
<sup>268</sup> Luther does not believe Paul

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>269</sup> Luther's words

those words on marriage quoted from Genesis 2, or else, according
to the commonly held opinion, he teaches that the spiritual marriage
of Christ is taught in that passage.

O Satan, Satan, how much more hon- estly even you treat the scripture than does your disciple Luther! <sup>270</sup> For, although you tried to misuse one text through trickery, yet you applied to Christ those words of scripture which pertained to Him. "It is written of	5
you," you said, "'God has given His angels command concerning you.'" But Luther not only does not apply to Christ the scriptural text which pertains to Christ, but he even belittles, so far as he can, the trustworthiness of the apostle's application of the text. Exult, Satan; you have the kind of disciple who makes even the word of Christ doubtful. <sup>271</sup>	10
For, although Christ says, "No disciple is above his teacher, but it is enough for him if he be like his teacher," it is not enough for your disciple Luther if he be a liar and a schemer such as you are, Satan, but he strives to surpass you by far. And so, when he tries first of all to disparage the authority of the sacrament	15
according to the interpretation he wants accepted: that if that passage of Genesis did pertain in any way to Christ and the church, it would not, at any event, pertain to Him except superficially, as if by some commonly held opinion, lest it be thought to pertain properly to that point; yet, conscious that Paul cannot be so understood since	20
he exalts the greatness of that sacrament so explicitly in so many ways on the authority of that passage of Genesis about the union of Adam with Eve, a passage applied so properly, so truly, to the marriage of Christ with the church, what does the scoundrel do? Why, something more pestilential than anything he could have devised for destroying	25
the force of all the scriptures. Paul, he says, forcibly applies that passage to Christ, possibly on his own initiative. <sup>272</sup> O scoundrel, scoundrel, you suggest a scruple, as if the apostle would interpret the scriptures, not according to the spirit of God, but	30
according to his own—that is, a human—spirit, which you so often call deceptive; nor does he only interpret but he even "forcibly applies" them, as if he seizes them by the neck and twists them resisting into a different meaning.	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>270</sup> Satan applies the scriptures more honestly than Luther
<sup>271</sup> You have found a man according to your heart
<sup>272</sup> See how Luther defers to the scriptures

Is this your deference for the scriptures, you who boast that you believe nothing but the scriptures? You who accept nothing else but the scriptures, do you accept the scriptures in such a way that you do not believe even the apostles concerning the meaning of the scrip- tures, although the apostles learned the meaning of the scriptures from the Lord? But, you say, they speak some things from Christ, some things from their own head, and the former must necessarily be believed, the latter can be doubted. Let	5
your friarity, reverend friar, give us, then, a rule by which we may distinguish those passages in scripture which the apostles interpret according to God's meaning from those which they forcibly apply and twist according to their own personal judgment. <sup>273</sup> I hear, honored doctor, that you give us such a rule: that the interpretation of the apostles and evangelists	10
on the sacred writings must stand firm wherever they add to their interpretations, "Thus says the Lord"; but, as to the other things which they say, that they themselves speak them, or rather they forcibly apply or twist the scriptures where they please according to their own personal, that is a human, judgment. Nor should they be	15
believed in such cases because all men are liars, as you have earlier blathered in that madly raving book of yours in regard to Jeremiah, Isaiah, Elias and John the Baptist. <sup>274</sup> A single scoundrel, therefore, renders questionable all the	20
passages which the evangelists so often cite from the prophets or from any passage of scripture whatever, all those which the apostles so often bring forward in support of Christ, and he opens the way for everyone to say that these passages were not predictions about Christ but that the evangelists and the apostles have on their own judgment	25
forcibly applied to Christ what the prophets have written about other persons. What is this, reader, if it is not openly to attack the scriptures? But come, though; let this, if you will, be nothing; I grant you, Luther, who are so wicked that hardly any vice is a vice to you, I	30
grant you, I say, that it is a trifling matter to contemn all the holy doctors. I grant that it is not a proof of a mind hostile to the scriptures that you strive and struggle to render all the inter- pretations of the apostles suspect. <sup>275</sup> This at least not a single person will	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>273</sup> A necessary rule for understanding the scriptures
<sup>274</sup> That Jeremiah, Isaiah, Elias, John the Baptist seem liars to Luther
<sup>275</sup> Luther openly attacks the scriptures

be too stupid to sense: how openly, how directly your not hesitating impiously to attack an undoubtedly sacred text as profane aims at sweeping away all the scriptures. Indeed, what is still more hateful: even if you have conceded that a text is canonical and written by the	
pen of an apostle, yet you dare to say that no faith should be placed in it and, setting your face against heaven, you do not fear to blaspheme an apostle with your abusive tongue. And so, you scoundrel, recognize again the sacrilegious words with which, when you were hard pressed by the apostle James' words on the sacrament	5
of extreme unction, you, as though engaged in hand-to-hand conflict with the apostle, empty out on an apostle of God, you most base buffoon, the privy of your filthy mouth.	10
I pass over, <sup>276</sup> you say, the fact that many	
persons assert with great probability that this epistle is not by James and is not	15
worthy of the apostolic spirit, although whosesoever it is, it has acquired authority by custom. Nevertheless, you say, if it were by the apostle James, I would say that no apostle is permitted to institute a sacrament on his own authority; that is, to give a divine promise with	
a sign accompanying it. This belonged to Christ alone. Thus, Paul says that he received the sacrament of the eucharist from the Lord and that he was sent not to baptize but to preach the gospel. Nowhere in the gospel, however, does one read of this sacrament of extreme unction.	20
Reader, please reread what the prince has written against these	25
words. There you will immediately discover in how few words of Luther the prince has discovered and refuted how many absurdities. For he shows that Luther unjustly censures the church, that he impiously contradicts an apostle, and that	
he is also stupidly inconsistent with him-	30
self. <sup>277</sup> And all three of these things in scarcely three lines, so that no man's wisdom has ever been so wonderful as this fellow's folly is bewildering. What will you say here, Luther? What burrow have you provided for yourself by which you	
can flee? Will you deny that whoever wrote that epistle is clearly describing a sacrament, and will you depart from your definition of a sacrament as such, which you wanted to consist of a sensible sign and a promise of grace clearly included in the sacred writings? Or will	35

\_\_\_\_

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>276</sup> Luther's words against blessed James the apostle
<sup>277</sup> The shameful (if he had any shame) lapse of Luther

you deny, as you have done, that that epistle should be numbered among the sacred writings? But the same church which numbers the gospels among the sacred writings, the same church, I say, numbers among the sacred writings this epistle. <sup>278</sup> In this matter you	5
are lying, whether the church can be deceived or whether it cannot be deceived. If she can be deceived in discerning the words of God, you lie precisely in saying that she cannot be deceived on this score. If she cannot be deceived, you again lie in saying that this epistle, which the church has approved as apostolic, is probably not apostolic. What remains then but that you should retract what you have said and instead	10
deny once again that the church can discern the words of God, and then you would be calling into doubt even the epistles of Paul and the gospels? <sup>279</sup> And you who contend that nothing is certain except the sacred scripture would then be render- ing nothing more uncertain than sacred scripture itself.	15
But still more dangerous is the fact that you even dared to contemn the epistle, if you have admitted that it is the apostle's; doubtless, I suppose, because the apostles are ours, not we theirs, according to that text which you cite as foolishly as you do frequently: "For all things are yours, whether Apollo, or	20
Cephas, or Paul. <sup>280</sup> It does not behoove us, then, you will say, to be judged by them but to judge them. How then, Luther, do you say that you are doing this so that the scriptures alone may be believed, since you do not admit as scripture a clear scriptural text? But if you rejected no scripture at	25
all, nevertheless, since you care not a straw for all interpreters taken together, you return to the same spot since you believe nothing at all which is not manifest in evident scriptural texts. <sup>281</sup> For what scriptural text will ever be sufficiently evident if one can, as you are	30
trying to do, cause the opinion of good men and of learned men to have no force against either the stupid interpretations of ignorant men or the crafty ones of wicked men? Who does not see that by this means it will come about that nothing at all can be proved from sacred scripture to a man so senseless that he either cannot or will not understand the sense of scripture? Indeed, that nothing is so absurd,	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>278</sup> But Luther has nothing to do with the church, which he has long ago renounced. Luther is hemmed in on all sides
<sup>279</sup> Here you hold the wolf by the ears, Luther
<sup>280</sup> Luther would want that saying unsaid
<sup>281</sup> You are driving out one nail with another, Luther

nothing is so impious but someone like you, a raging madman and a shameless fellow, can argue he proves it by the testimonies of sacred scripture. For example, if some scoundrel should deny that Christ descended into hell, he will boast that he admits nothing besides evident scriptures, and he will deny that this teaching is proved by any sufficiently evident scriptural text. But if someone should cite that verse from the psalm, "My flesh shall rest in hope because you will not leave my soul in hell," he will cite in his turn what-	5
ever fabrication he chooses from the commentaries of the Jews, and he will deny that that text refers in any way to Christ. <sup>282</sup> But if someone objects in turn that the apostle Peter declared that that psalm speaks of Christ (Acts 2), the scoundrel will not hesitate to say of Peter what our scoundrel said of Paul; namely, that Peter forcibly	10
applied that text to Christ on his own initiative. But if some other scoundrel wants good works not to be required for salvation, he will cite that text of the gospel, "Whoever believes and is baptized shall be saved"; nothing else therefore should be required. Then, if someone should deny that this text is to	15
be so understood and should cite the real	20
meaning, together with the testimony of all the doctors, the fellow will scorn all the doctors and will stick to his own interpretation, bawling only that the scriptural text is evident. <sup>283</sup> But if someone keeps bringing up to him some objection or other from	
sacred scripture, the scoundrel will not hesitate to escape immediately by means of some silly trick or other. For example, if someone brings up that text of James, "Faith without works is dead," the fellow will say the same thing as our rascal has said: that the epistle is not James', that it is not any apostle's, that it has nothing worthy of the apostolic spirit.	25
Finally, should the epistle be proved to be an apostle's, the fellow will still say that the apostle does not speak correctly, that he has arrogated too much to himself in imposing the law of good	30
works on Christians whom Christ has made free in faith alone from every yoke of good works. <sup>284</sup> Nor should any- one but Christ alone be able to impose any law or any syllable of the law on any Christian. <sup>285</sup> For the apostles did not have authority enough to judge us, but it is our right to judge them. "For all things are ours, whether	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>282</sup> That Luther fashions and changes the scriptures at will
<sup>283</sup> He relies on himself alone in interpreting the scriptures
<sup>284</sup> While he himself acts too arrogantly
<sup>285</sup> And does not He require good works?

Apollo, or Cephas, or Paul." For thus the fellow has been taught by Luther.	
If anyone therefore, passing over your disciple, should object to you once more, Luther: "The church has judged this epistle to be the apostle's, to have been written by the divine Spirit," and should bring up to you your own words: "This power at least has been given by God to the church, that she can distinguish the words of God from the words of men," then you will retract this statement immediately and will say that you have now weighed	5
the matter more carefully, <sup>286</sup> that the church has no power from God but that the church can be deceived in accepting scripture. But if someone or other will add that therefore the gospels	10
themselves are uncertain, you will doubtless concede this also: that the true gospels are probably not the scriptures and gospels which we read but rather some one of those which the church has rejected. <sup>287</sup> And concerning these matters,	15
each one believes at his own risk. But if someone should at this point throw up to you your incon- sistency, because you are so often at variance with yourself and disagree with your own self, here indeed with how many jeers, how many guffaws and snorts will that man be mocked who is so ignorant,	20
so inexperienced in arguing that he does not know what it means for a man to disagree with himself, or considers capricious and unstable a person who is consistently inconsistent, <sup>288</sup> or demands that a man's words should be bound fast as a bull's horns are bound fast	25
so that if he has ever said anything worthwhile he should not be permitted later to retract it when it would be to his advantage and to turn it into something evil, even as he changes nothing for the better of those things which he has at any time said badly. You see here clearly, reader, with what good faith this good man proclaims that he	30
proclaims: <sup>289</sup> "The gospel! The gospel!"—as if anyone has ever been a heretic who did not proclaim the gospel—while at the same time he devises for himself a way whereby he may raise a doubt as to whether the gospel be the gospel, and by false interpretations weakens	35

 $<sup>^{286}</sup>$  Wherever he is inconsistent, he has of course considered the matter more carefully  $^{287}$  He is undoubtedly heading in that direction and will arrive there very soon

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>288</sup> Luther consistently inconsistent

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>289</sup> With what good faith Luther proclaims: The gospel! The gospel! All heretics have this in common with Luther

the scriptures which, he says, should alone reign, and gives everyone the license of daring the same thing. Whatever scriptures he pleases he does not acknowledge as sacred; then, if the case presses him hard, he even contemns those which have been acknowledged; so that you cannot have any doubt that he himself has proved for us that which we initially promised we were ready to prove: that he does this only in order to destroy the very scriptures for which he pretends to fight.	5
He declares that Luther, who boasts that the papists use a corrupt method of disputation by begging the initial premise, not only makes this objection falsely against others, but also uses this as his own peculiar and perpetual method of disputing. This whole chapter is delightful. Chapter 20.	10
Come now, let us carefully examine that point in which Luther strangely delights and considers himself witty and skillful, <sup>290</sup> when he makes sport of the catholic church as papistic and thinks everyone in comparison with himself so	15
ignorant that no one understands either what the point in question is or by what method the point ought to be proved. "There is, <sup>291</sup> " he says, "among these very men a most corrupt method of dis- puting which they call 'begging the initial	20
premise.' This they learn and teach even till grey hairs, even till the grave, with so much sweat, with so much waste, the utterly wretched men." Let us see, then, reader, which of the two sides begs the initial premise more corruptly; for each side begs	25
some initial premise. We beg of him four postulates. <sup>292</sup> First, <sup>293</sup> we beg that Luther believe the sacred writings. We beg <sup>294</sup> that he believe that some things were said, done, taught by God which are not contained in writing.	30

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>290</sup> He does not try to prove; he wishes to be believed on his word
<sup>291</sup> Luther's words. You of course are fortunate in being taught from heaven without your own effort

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>292</sup> Our postulates

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>293</sup> Postulate I

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>294</sup> Postulate II

We beg <sup>295</sup> that he believe that the church has been given the power from God to distinguish the words of God from the words of men and the tradi-	
tions of God from the traditions of men, with Christ clearly governing His church constantly and the Holy Spirit always directing the agreement of the church in matters of faith.	5
We beg finally <sup>296</sup> that in a disputed inter-	
pretation of the sacred writings he believe the consistent judgment of the holy fathers and the faith of the whole	
catholic church rather than his own opinion.	10
Although we consider these postulates no less evident to the	10
Christian than the geometrical postulates of Euclid are to the	
philosopher, nevertheless this fellow postulates reasons for such	
postulates.	
And so we have presented for the last	15
postulate, <sup>297</sup> besides several other reasons,	
the fact that it is easier and more probable that one man is deceived	
and out of his mind than that many are so, that a bad man mis-	
understands rather than good men, that a heretical man errs rather	
than the catholic church.	20
The second last postulate <sup>298</sup> we prove	
indeed by many and evident testimonies of	
sacred scripture, with many reasons besides, and finally by the	
confession of Luther himself.	
Next, as to the postulate that some	25
things have been said, <sup>299</sup> done, taught by	
Christ which have not been written, besides other evident reasons,	
besides other passages of scripture, we have proved this on the	
authority of Paul; we have proved it by the gospel.	• •
As for the first postulate, <sup>300</sup> that the sacred	30
scripture must be believed, we had hoped	
that Luther would not demand any proof	
at all for this, because he so often proclaims throughout all his books	
that he demands nothing else than that the sacred scripture alone should be believed.	35
	55
Luther jeers at all these postulates of ours. <sup>301</sup> He considers the last one to be	
utterly foolish: that anyone should beg him	
to believe the fathers and the church rather than himself. Whereas	
to believe the fathers and the church father than minisch. Whereas	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>295</sup> Postulate III

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>296</sup> Postulate IV

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>297</sup> Reason for the fourth

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>298</sup> Reason for the third

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>299</sup> Reason for the second

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>300</sup> Why there is no reason for the first

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>301</sup> Why he does not grant the fourth postulate

the fathers, so he says, and the judgment of the church are at times deceived, he himself cannot be deceived, because he is certain, so he says, that he has his teaching from heaven. The next to last postulate, <sup>302</sup> however,	
although once granted by himself, he now	5
nevertheless retracts altogether. For he	
thinks it ridiculous if anyone should think the church is governed by	
the Holy Spirit in the faith, since the Turk would ridicule anyone	
begging such an initial premise. And so, the pious priest will rather	
be impious toward Christ than be ridiculous to the Turk.	10
The second postulate <sup>303</sup> he clearly con-	
siders worthless, since whatever Christ has	
said, done or taught which has not been	
written Luther once and for all considers as of no importance, be-	
cause—I suppose—if those points had been of importance, Luther did	15
not think that Christ would have been so negligent as not to have	
taken care that they be included in scripture.	
Next, because of the authority of scrip-	
ture, he treats the first postulate ambigu-	
ously. <sup>304</sup> For he often cites the scriptures	20
erroneously, and very often he twists them from a true meaning to a	
false one when he has no support for himself but his own words, and	
those almost always contrary to his own conscience. When the words	
of scripture express conflicting ideas, the fathers give a consistent	
interpretation, and the whole church through so many ages agrees;	25
at such times we inexperienced Thomists beg the initial premise that	
he believe everyone taken as a whole	
rather than a single individual. <sup>305</sup> But because	
this is begging an initial premise, we are repulsed with the ridicule of	• •
this fellow, shrewd and quite artful in arguing, and we are over-	30
whelmed by waves of roaring laughter.	
But if you present a text of scripture which is so clear that there can	
be no question about its meaning, then, driven by necessity, he	
betrays himself and openly denies the scriptural text. If the situation	25
requires, he says that the epistle of James is not apostolic, or even if	35
it be an apostle's, still the apostle has arro-	
gated too much to himself. <sup>306</sup> And when once	
Luther has said this, if anyone should	
again insist that Luther yield to the	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>302</sup> Why he denies the third postulate
<sup>303</sup> Why he does not admit the second postulate
<sup>304</sup> How he treats the first postulate

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>305</sup> But it is not convenient

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>306</sup> Is it not you who too impiously arrogate too much to yourself?

authority of the apostle, then that person will be mocked in a thousand	
ways as a man ignorant of disputing, one who is not ashamed to use	
the most corrupt form of disputing and to beg the initial premise;	
namely, that that be considered scripture which Luther denies is	
scripture, or that the apostle be believed to have written correctly,	5
although Father Tosspot has said once and for all that he has erred.	
In this way, then, reader, we corruptly beg the initial premise.	
Luther, on the contrary, is a little more modest, for he also has	
established an initial premise, but only one, which he demands to	
have granted to himself. It is, however, of	10
this kind: that he alone must be believed	
on all matters. <sup>307</sup>	
This initial premise, as a matter known by nature, he does not	
hesitate to beg everywhere; in fact, to assume as by his own right.	
Suppose there is a question about the meaning of a scriptural text; he	15
first presents what he himself either thinks or at least pretends to	
think; you in turn present whatever has always been the judgment of	
all Christians; he drives everyone away like flies and begs that he be	
believed. He denies that human laws are useful; you in turn present	
whatever has always been the judgment of mortals; he jeers at the	20
whole world and demands that he be believed. He denies the sacra-	
ment of extreme unction; you in turn present the apostle James; he	
contemns the apostle and demands that he be believed. Thus, almost	
everywhere he begs that this initial premise be granted him: that in	
all matters he alone be believed.	25
This postulate of his: although no one does not see that it is	
apparently very fair, nevertheless because we fear the snares and	
subtleties of this sophistical fellow, we will be prevailed upon	
reluctantly and with difficulty to grant	
him this postulate, especially because we	30
are aware that on this initial premise and	
brilliant axiom of Luther rests the whole foundation of the marvelous	
Lutheran doctrine. <sup>308</sup> Once this initial premise is granted, it is amazing	
to relate the sort and importance of the conclusions he will prove to	
you in such a way that you simply cannot deny them. But if you deny	35
that axiom, he proves to you absolutely nothing. We therefore put off	
granting him so subtle and sophistical a premise, and we ask of him:	
"By what reason, father, do you prove that you alone must be	
believed?"	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>307</sup> Luther's sole postulate<sup>308</sup> On what initial premise the Lutheran doctrine rests

To this he returns this cause: "Because I am certain," he says, "that I have my teachings from heaven."	
Again we ask: "By what reason are you certain that you have your	
teachings from heaven?"	_
"Because God has seized me unawares," he says, "and carried me	5
into the midst of these turmoils."	
Again therefore we demand: "How do you know that God has	
seized you?" "Baseves Lam cartain "ha says "that my teaching is from Cod"	
"Because I am certain," he says, "that my teaching is from God." "How do you know that?"	10
"Because God has seized me."	10
"How do you know this?"	
"Because I am certain."	
"How are you certain?"	
"Because I know."	15
"But how do you know?"	15
"Because I am certain."	
I ask you, reader, whether that form of disputing does not find a	
place here, the form by means of which (un-	
less Luther is lying) Amsdorf lyingly says	20
that the theologians of Leipzig dispute,	
as follows: <sup>309</sup> when the respondent has denied his opponent's assumed	
initial premise, the opponent proves the same premise as follows:	
"It must be so." When the former again denies it, then the latter	
says a second time, "And how can it be otherwise? It must be so."	25
To this lie Luther has added, as one of his better sayings, the	
flourish:310 "Splendidly," he says, "and most	
Thomistically, or rather, most Leipzigly	
and most Henricianly."	
Now, since the reverend father founds all his arguments on this	30
initial premise: <sup>311</sup> "I am certain because I	
know, and I know because I am certain,	
and I am certain because I cannot err, and	
I cannot err because I am certain, and I am certain because I know,"	
may we not re-echo against the reverend father the flourish of the	35
reverend father: "Splendidly and most Wittenbergly, or rather, most	
stupidly and most Lutheranly."	
You see, then, reader, that in this passage I quote none of his	
statements in the way that he usually quotes all the statements from	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>309</sup> Amsdorl's fable about the theologians
<sup>310</sup> Luther's flourish
<sup>311</sup> Luther's flourish is wittily retorted

the king's book. He quotes nothing honestly, but he either distorts it badly or he cites from the book statements which are nowhere in the book; but while he is recounting them he is fashioning for himself monsters to conquer. But we, as a matter of fact, make clear that the	
scriptures are thus presented by him, thus twisted from their own meaning, that this fellow thus prefers his own fancies to the judgments of all the saints, that he thus counts the whole church as straw in comparison with himself, that he thus openly denies the sacred	5
scripture and clearly contemns the acknowledged scripture, that he thus establishes his own teachings without scripture and contrary to scripture, so that you cannot doubt that in very truth this fellow everywhere begs this single initial premise: that against everyone and everything he alone be believed on all matters.	10
Lest it can seem that he makes up such absurd things as these about Luther through calumny, he recalls the very words of Luther and examines them carefully; from which it is clear that Luther both said and thought things in many ways still more absurd. Chapter 21.	15
Nevertheless, that you may not doubt that this inference was not drawn from ambiguous words of his but that it was proclaimed by himself in the clearest of words, consider carefully the very words of the rascal.	20
I am certain, <sup>312</sup> he says, that I have my teachings from heaven, I who have tri- umphed even over him who has more strength and cunning in his little fingernail than do all the popes and kings and doctors.	25
Likewise, shortly after:	
The Lord has seized me unawares and carried me into the midst of these turmoils.	30
And again:	
Here I need have no reason for patience, when the trifling buffoon	

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>312</sup> Luther's words

attacks with his lies, not me nor my life, but the very doctrine which I am most certain is not mine but Christ's.	
And when he has proved this simply by saying it, then by his own right the rascal rages wildly against the king, as if to reprove a heretic on behalf of the faith were in very truth to blaspheme God.	5
He would have to be forgiven if humanly he erred. <sup>313</sup> Now, since he knowingly and consciously fabricates lies against the majesty of my king in heaven, this damnable rottenness and worm, I will have the right, on behalf of my king, to bespatter his English majesty with muck and shit and to trample underfoot that crown of his which blasphemes against Christ.	10
Come, do not rage so violently, good father; but if you have raved wildly enough, listen now, you pimp. You recall that you falsely complained above that the king has shown no passage in your whole book, even as an example, in which he said that you contradict your- self. You told this lie shortly before, although the king has demon- strated to you many examples of your in-	15
consistency. Suppose that the king here in turn asks of you why you have not pro-	20
duced even one passage as an example in which you say he blasphemes God. <sup>314</sup> Your paternity must by all means search out and produce this passage. But meanwhile, for as long as your reverend paternity will be determined to tell these shameless lies, others will be permitted, on behalf of his English majesty, to throw back into your paternity's shitty mouth, truly the shit-pool of all shit, all the muck and shit which your damnable rottenness has vomited up, and to empty out all the sewers and privies onto your crown divested of the dignity of the	25
priestly crown, against which no less than against the kingly crown you have deter-	30
mined to play the buffoon. <sup>315</sup> In your sense of fairness, honest reader, you will forgive me that the utterly filthy words of this scoundrel have forced me to answer such things, <sup>316</sup> for which I should have begged your leave. Now I consider truer than truth that saying: "He who touches pitch will be wholly defiled by it." For I am	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>313</sup> Luther's words, worthy of the Lord
<sup>314</sup> Why is it less fair for him to do this to you than for you to do it to him?
<sup>315</sup> He cuts the man's throat out with his own sword

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>316</sup> On the contrary, he himself had to be thus adorned with his own virtues

ashamed even of this necessity, that while I clean out the fellow's shit-filled mouth I see my own-fingers covered with shit. But who can endure such a scoundrel who shows himself possessed by a thousand vices and tormented by a legion of demons and yet stupidly boasts thus: <sup>317</sup> "The holy	5
fathers have all erred. The whole church has often erred. My teaching cannot err, because I am most certain	
that my teaching is not my own but	
Christ's,"318 alluding of course to those words	
of Christ, "My words are not my own but	10
His who sent me, the Father's"? What about the following: "The pope	
shall fall; my teachings will stand firm"? <sup>319</sup>	
Does it not seem to vie with that statement	
of Christ: "Heaven and earth shall pass away, not one iota of my	15
words shall perish"? For when he says, "The Lord has seized me unawares and carried me into the midst of these turmoils," this is	15
more than, "The devil took Him and	
placed Him on a pinnacle of the temple." <sup>320</sup>	
Then, how boastful is that statement: "I have triumphed over him	
who has more strength and cunning in his little fingernail than do all	20
the popes and kings and doctors"? How much more boastfully this	
fellow exults than did Christ, who said of	
Himself somewhat more modestly: "I have	
overcome the world"; and likewise: "The	
prince of this world comes and in me he has nothing"? But what does	25
this fellow say? <sup>321</sup> "Therefore I have triumphed, not over the world, but	
far more sublimely, over the prince of the world, the devil." Then he trumpets his triumph and tinsels it with	
pompous bombast: <sup>322</sup> "I have triumphed,"	
he says, "over him who has more strength	30
and cunning in his little fingernail than do	00
all popes and kings and doctors." O swelling triumph! But whence	
have we learned this? What will he say to us here who proves every-	
thing by evident scriptures? What else but the words of Christ (for he	
tries to vie with Him): "I bear witness to myself"? But if someone	35
should answer, "Your testimony is not true," he will have recourse	
immediately to his new scripture. <sup>323</sup> "I am	
certain that I have my teachings from heaven." And there he will stand firm on this initial premise of his as	
neaven. And there he will stand infin on this initial premise of his as	

<sup>323</sup> Luther's new scripture

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>317</sup> The most mild father swells with bombast

 <sup>&</sup>lt;sup>318</sup> Luther's first parallel concerning himself
 <sup>319</sup> Second parallel
 <sup>320</sup> Third parallel

 <sup>&</sup>lt;sup>321</sup> Here he surpasses his counter-parallel
 <sup>322</sup> Of course according to the proverb: he has a right to praise himself whom no one else will praise

on a most firm foundation that not all the popes, kings, doctors, men, angels will be able to destroy.	
Certain, then, indeed most certain that	
he has his doctrines from heaven, as men	_
who sleep are certain, indeed most certain	5
that everything they dream is true; <sup>324</sup> or rather certain, indeed most	
certain that he lies with his eyes wide open in saying that his teachings	
are from heaven, whereas his own conscience murmurs to him that	
they have been let loose in him by the deceits of demons; he curses	
any men and angels who contradict his teachings. <sup>325</sup> And he protests that	10
all those who do not fear to reproach his most filthy blasphemies set	
their face against heaven and besmirch	
sacred things and blaspheme God. His only	
cry is: "Let all be anathema who attack my	
teachings, because I am certain that I have	15
my teachings from heaven."	
With this initial premise begged by the reverend father and granted	
by no one, he thus argues further, this reverend friar, Father Tosspot	
Luther, fugitive extraordinary of Saint	
Augustine, <sup>326</sup> one of the unskilled masters of	20
Wittenberg, unformed ranter of both kinds of law, and unlearned	
doctor in sacred theology:327 "I am certain	
that I have my teachings from heaven;	
therefore my teachings are heavenly." And then further thus: "My	
teachings are heavenly; therefore whoever contradicts my teachings	25
sets his face against heaven and blasphemes God. Because, therefore,	
my teachings are indeed contradicted by the pope, the emperor, kings,	
bishops, priests, the laity, and in fine all good men, I will be permitted	
on behalf of the majesty of my God, to anathematize the pope, the	
emperor, kings, bishops, priests, the laity, in fine all good men, to	30
assail them with curses and insults, and	
against all their crowns and heads I will be	
permitted to spew out of my mouth muck,	
filth, dung, shit." <sup>328</sup>	
These are the conclusions of the reverend father, deduced by	35
necessity from this same father's initial premise, begged by him: that	
we should believe him to be certain that his teachings are from	
heaven.	

But come, reverend father, suppose I carried out the deduction

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>324</sup> How certain Luther is that his teachings are true
<sup>325</sup> Why do you not also swear, so that you can convince men of this matter?
<sup>326</sup> A witty pun
<sup>327</sup> Luther's series of syllogisms
<sup>328</sup> You do this incessantly, Luther

thus: "I am certain that the reverend friar father is an ass; therefore the reverend friar father is an ass." If the reverend father should here grant me this antecedent premise, how many conclusions I may infer: he will undoubtedly have to eat hay; he will have to bear burdens; and what is most galling, he will have to do without beer; Father Tosspot would be vexed to hear that. <sup>329</sup> But rather than be forced to this conclusion, he would not	5
hesitate to demand that I prove I am certain he is an ass; otherwise, shameless as he is, he will not be ready to grant what everyone never- theless sees to be evident. But I should not hesitate immediately to prove the antecedent in this way: "I am certain that as no animal laughs but man, so no animal brays but an ass; but I am certain that	10
the reverend friar, Father Tosspot, is some animal and that he brays most brayingly; therefore I am certain the reverend friar, Father Tosspot, is most truly an ass." See, reverend father, I have proved my antecedent, nor would I have demanded that it be granted me had I not proved it. I pray you also, reverend father, prove that assumption of yours: how your	15
paternity is certain that you have your teachings from heaven, from what messen- ger you received them. <sup>330</sup> "For no one has ascended into heaven except Him who has descended from heaven." But at this point, as I hear, you will reply that your teachings were	20
brought down to you from heaven, not indeed by Him who descended from heaven, but by him who fell like lightning from heaven. You answer well, reverend friar. Really, I do not qualify as your teacher, but I leave you with the cacodaemon who inspires your teachings, with whom you will remain in Tartarus for ever and ever.	25
I am indeed not so prejudiced in my own favor that I will not easily forgive you, reader, if you should at times little approve of this frivolity of mine by which I occa- sionally intersperse certain things which suit neither the gravity of the	30
matter nor your seriousness. <sup>331</sup> And yet, I think there has never been anyone so severe as not to think it fair either to wink at us occasion- ally or to forgive us—when he reads everywhere the most filthy insolence of a most stupid scoundrel against a most prudent prince— if we are so stirred by indignation that, even though unwillingly, we	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>329</sup> And he would be more vexed to endure it
<sup>330</sup> Doubtless from frenzy, his constant servant
<sup>331</sup> The epilogue of the things that have been proved in this first book

are forced in turn to act foolishly and, as Solomon says, "to respond to the fool according to his folly," especially since the fellow's book, leaving aside completely the subject of concern, idles about entirely in scurrilous trifles.	
We may in passing make sport of his madness; nevertheless, at the same time we handle the matter in such a way that everything that we promised at the beginning is made clearly evident to you. For since his general response includes in sum	5
nothing else than that nothing must be held for certain except what is included in evident scriptures, <sup>332</sup> but that all other things—even if they are not opposed by the sacred writings and are confirmed by the unbroken	10
agreement of the whole church—either must be wholly rooted out as traditions of men (which policy he indeed thinks best), or at least they are to be tolerated so freely that each of those things is left wholly to each individual	15
to approve, disapprove, change, condemn, reject, wherever, whenever, as often as he pleases. <sup>333</sup> Since he places in this category all human laws, the decrees of the fathers, the councils	20
of the church, and the sacraments, fear of purgatory, the veneration of the saints and the rite of celebrating mass, we have made manifest both by most clear scriptures and most evident reasons that the word of God has been handed down without scripture and that this word	20
is of no less authority than is the scripture itself. We have proved by the authority of scripture and even by the confession of Luther him- self that the church cannot err at all in distinguishing the word of God in matters of faith. We have proved that the church which he calls papistic is the true catholic church of Christ. We have proved that	25
those sacraments which Luther calls the traditions of men are not the traditions of men but of God, and that thus he denies the word of God, not of men. We have proved that he not only stupidly abolishes all human laws but also attacks	30
both secretly and openly the scriptures themselves. <sup>334</sup> From the latter we have shown more clearly than light that whatever he has presented from the scripture he cites so stupidly in support of his own case that no fool could cite it more stupidly. And since, on the meaning of any scriptural text, he would want no one to believe all men taken as a whole but every single person to believe himself, we have made clear	35

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>332</sup> The sum of the Lutheran principle
<sup>333</sup> The condition presented by Luther
<sup>334</sup> How much more truly and modestly does he preach about himself than Luther does

that he is contriving to weaken the force of all scripture and to turn all		321
its fruit into destruction. Then, since he does not admit that an un-		
contested scriptural text is scripture but denies that it has anything		
worthy of scripture, and since the apostate does not hesitate to cen-		
sure an apostle, we have made it very clear that he not only secretly	5	
but even openly destroys the very scriptures for which he pretends to		
fight. Finally, aside from his most wicked lies, and his most stupid		
contradictions, and his thousand follies, which we have exposed from		
here and there, we also proved that that corrupt method of disputing		
by begging the initial premise which he thought he had so very	10	
wittily cast in the teeth of others; this method, I say, we proved to be		
his one and only form of disputing.		
Thus then, reader, we have discharged		
more than we promised, and we have done		
it with proofs drawn from hardly any other source than the book of	15	
the king.335 And since, as you see, Luther's general response has now		
turned out prettily for him, we next gird ourselves to handle his		
special answers; you shall not see one of them in which you will not		
laugh at the singular folly of the fellow.		

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>335</sup> Bear this in mind, reader